

[03/08, 12:38] Mk: My handsome monster-

Our holy matrimony INTRODUCTION

Being an orphan amongst four other orphans is hard especially being the kind one amongst them. I grew up without my parents and i don't need them i don't think i'll ever need them. My family aint rich but our grandmother makes sure that we have everything we need starting from food to school supplies she's the only person who I truly care for without pretence. She has her little spaza shop, gets pension money and some of grandfather's policies so that's how we survive. I'm not big fan of sharing but now I have to share my room with my older sister and her year old daughter. I actually hate her actually I hate all my siblings the only person I love and respect is my grandmother, well both my sisters are just a load of work I mean Tshepiso(20) had her child at 19 and Winter(25) is never home she deals with sugar daddies so she wears fancy stuff and is always

going to fancy parties. Then there are the little twins Trey and Lerato weird thing we all don't have parents and I don't know why. I'm not one to talk I'd rather smoke my weed or bubbly with my friends and rap our feelings I don't the thing called a boyfriend I hate boys except for Leroy (19) he's my man friend and I love him with my entire blood pumping heart. Him, Kuli and Unathi understand me and they are the only people I can call friends without doubting it. I don't hate school nor do I love it so it's 50/50. I'm just an average student and I don't know why I mean I'll be stuck at home with my large family in our cramped house without anything to help me. Hi My name is Rorisho aka Rori Mphahlele 17 years of age and doing grade 11. I'm a medium height chick I'm chubby in all the right places I'm not your Bonang or Rihanna body size and I'm proud to be a 32. I don't have that paper flat stomach I have my stretch marks and Lord knows I love myself like

that. I have an Afro I have big eyes brown in color and their dark bushy eyebrows, I have medium lips I have a gap on my upper teeth and I'm not perfect but I'm me. I'm a rebel I smoke and drink but don't judge me This is my story enjoy

[03/08, 12:39] Mk: My handsome monster-Our holy matrimony EPISODE 001 . . . "I don't fuck with you, you little stupid ass bitch I ain't fucking with you" Me:"argh" I groaned I rolled over and threw a pillow at Tshepiso. Me:"switch that thing of yours off or I'll break it" She just clicked her tongue and switched off her alarm. I took the blanket and covered my head I mean it's a Saturday so what the hell does she need an alarm for. Soon after I heard her child crying. Me:"argh man fokof can't a girl enjoy her sleep on her birthday? Nxa" I jumped out of bed busy cursing under my breath. I walked into the living room and found my older sister Winter I just tried to turn around but she saw me.

Her:"birthday girl come here" I faced her with a weird smile on my face. Me:"yes" Her:"so how do you plan on spending it?" Me:"smoke and drink the normal stuff" Her:"I don't think I'll give you money for weed and alcohol" Me:"good thing I didn't ask for it" Her:"you'll die from liver failure" Me:"you'll die from pussy failure win win" I mumbled Her:"what?" Me:"I said death is better than this sh..." "Oh happy birthday my child" Granny came in the front door with plastics in her hands so I just ran to her and took them. Me:"gogo why didn't you wake me? I would have gone with you" Gogo:"it's your birthday and you have to rest" I put the plastics in our small kitchen and went back to her. Me:"well you have to rest too remember your knee problems?" Gogo:"oh don't worry my child" Me:"well rest and I'll make you breakfast I just need to brush my teeth" I went into my room and found Tshepiso with her child holding my stash of weed. Me:"I want my R59 understand?"

That's costly" Her:"she won't smoke this rubbish" Me:"that rubbish is busy spilling on the bed and half of it is almost on the bed" I went to my side and took my tooth brush and toothpaste I went to brush my teeth outside busy wiggling my body I was wearing a peach short PJ pants and it's baggy crop top. As I said I don't have the"perfect figure" but I don't have a pot belly and that's why I love myself. I have stretch marks running from the back of my waist to my mid thighs amazing. I cleaned up and went back to the house, I went to put my toothbrush in the room. Me:"nkosi yami for real you'll buy this for me. What will smoke tonight?" Tshepiso:"you'll deal" She took her baby and walked out. Me:"you and your skwata camp of child neh God knows..." I took a deep breath and walked out following them I mean tonight everyone was supposed to bring their own stash but no they ruined everything. Me:"gogo can I borrow your phone please?" Gogo:"why?"

Me:"I'd like to text Kuli" Gogo:"well my grandchild you don't need my phone anymore"
Me:"but gogo Kuli's house is far from here"
Tshepi:"write a letter" Me:"I'm not talking to wena chicken legs" Gogo:"Rori don't please"
Me:"sorry gogo...so can you borrow me your phone" Gogo:"here you go your own phone"
Me:"gogo...you didn't have to" She gave me a mobicel rebel box it's just R400 but she didn't have to she could use the money for her medication and doctor's appointments. I just took the box Me:"gogo give me the slip I'm taking it back... This is too much" Winter:"that's nothing.." Me:"chakalaka and atchar stay out of it" She gave me a death stare nxa. Me:"gogo you really didn't have to" Gogo:"you are turning 18 today so you deserve this my child so please take it" Me:"mara Gogo" Gogo:"now go make me some tea then you can go and buy some airtime and you'll use your tweet face" Me:"o-kay Twitter gogo and Facebook two different

things but thanks gogo wami" I was joking when I said I don't want it haa I passed Tshepiso by the kitchen door. Me:"the devil is a liar" singing Winter:"I'll buy you some airtime" Me:"you don't know my number and wena I want my R60 before midday" Tshepi just clicked her tongue i just made the tea for gogo and took it to her. Me:"need anything else gogo?" Gogo:"no here you go spend it wisely" She gave me a two hundred rand note and Winter put another one on top hello you said you won't give it to me. I smiled Me:"thanks I'll go and unpack the groceries" Gogo:"no Tshepi will do it...go and wake the twins then go and get some fresh air" Me:"ayt happy birthday to me" I went to the kitchen door and just stopped in front of Tshepiso. I tapped my hand. Me:"gimme what's mine sister please" Tshepi:"gogo gave you some money" Me:"I'm talking to you Tshepi...I want my money" Tshepi:"nxa I'll give it to you" Me:"when I get back from that bedroom I want

my money" I went to gogo's bedroom and just woke the twins up they are the only 6 year olds in the house. I plugged in the phone and went into my room and made the bed i changed into my shorts and blue vest and flip-flops i was lazy to comb my afro so I just wore my rebel beanie. I walked into the living room and found the family having a nice family chat. Me:"Tshepiso" Tshepi:"here you go geez" Me:"awesome I'll be back guys" Gogo:"where are you going?" Me:"to buy airtime for my tweet face gogo" Gogo:"take care of yourself please" Me:"I'll be fine gogo..." [Car hoots] Me:"ehh chakalaka they are here to fetch you" Winter:"don't test me I'll take back my money" Me:" mxm take it" Gogo:"haii man leave the child alone" Winter:"she's disrespectful this one" Me:"don't stress out my grandma... Disrespectful my foot" I ran out of there busy laughing cause Winter was ready to hit me with her bag. I saw the guy who was busy waiting for winter and oh my goodness

he's ugly yeses I just ran away from them. I went to buy my airtime and stuff, I'll see where I'll buy the weed. On my way back I saw this red GTI parked in front of me well I took notice cause he seemed to be looking at me through his sunglasses. Weird I know but anyway I just continued taking a puff at my cigarette just a morning kick. "Rori wait up" Geez Unathi bad timing but I waited for her and she just snatched the cigarette from me. Her:"puff and pass" Me:"pay and puff sisi anyway where are you going?" Her:"to spend the morning with you" Me:"yoh the entire family is there and you know we can't smoke in front of gogo" Her:"eish yeah but let's go and fetch the weed" Me:"nxa Tshepi let her skwata camp spill it all fana" Her:"what? What will we mix the bubbly with tonight?" Me:"we'll buy some" She threw away the piece of cigarette away and just put her arm around my shoulder. Me:"you drank without me?" Her:"I just wanted to get rid of the hangover I'm telling

you last night was lit" Me:"mxm I hope you brought me some alcohol" Her:"six pack friend" Me:"let's go fetch it I need my morning fix" Her:"alright I'll text the others to come" Me:"cool and Gogo bought me my own phone so we cool" Her:"welele what type?" Me:"the same as yours" Her:"hehe we are twins now" Me:"weird thing okay" Her:"what's going on?" Me:"this might sound weird but I think that car is following me" Her:"oh let's go ask " Me:"stop being an idiot and get the booze" Her:"you ain't coming in?" Me:"no so you'll find me here" She skipped to her house and took the alcohol then we went to fetch Leroy. Me:"hommie" We did our five clap handshake and shoulder bumped. Leroy:"she finally legal,down five dawg" Me:"good boy now where is my pressy" Una:"burn" Leroy:"wait for later baby girl" Me:"ayt cool no bitches okay just our crew and alcohol" e Leroy:"heard ya" Una:"where is Kuli?" Me:"look for the big grin" Una:"oh yeah" Well

Kuli just attacked me with a big hug. Kuli:"happy birthday" Me:"you are squashing my bones geez" Kuli:"whatever... Hey guys" Una:"ola" Leroy:"bitch mtwana" Kuli:*so where are we going?" . Leroy:"anywhere just to push the time" Me:"you said it my pumpkin" Una:"weed" Me:"anything you want" We each took a can of alcohol and just walked to Tiny's crib where we buy our weed. Birthday party in progress.

[03/08, 12:39] Mk: My handsome monster-Our holy matrimony EPISODE 002 . . . I was home getting ready for the night out I mean I'm 18 finally I'm legal to drink and smoke without looking over my shoulder dope right. I applied some body lotion and wore my black torn up Jean up to my thigh and a black skull tshirt with a hoodie denim jacket with fabric sleeves. I combed my afro and put on my beanie safety measures just in case. I wore my black chucks viola I'm done I put on the sister Winters perfume who said she must use expensive

things huh. I took my phone and blue leather backpack and just walked out. Gogo:"my dear you look beautiful" Me:"Thank you gogo and thank you for the phone it comes in handy" Gogo:"remember to be safe" Me:"I will be now sleep tight and I love you" I kissed her cheek and walked out as soon as I heard Leroy whistling by the gate. Tshepi:"you better not come back pregnant" Me:"you beat me to it sis" I left the house and skipped on to the gate, I found my friends waiting for me busy smoking cigarettes each. Me:"welele share" Leroy:"here you go so tonight for your birthday present I'm taking you to a full blown club" Me:"what? " Leroy:" I did say wait for later didn't I? Now it's party time" Us:"yeah" Me:"we are not walking there are we? " Leroy:" well Tiny agreed to drop us off since he'll be operating on the outside" Me:"oh yeah" I just jumped on Leroy's back busy giggling I mean we are not even drunk yet but we are going crazy. Well Tiny did drive us to the

club and we bought some weed while at it. Leroy just got us in with our bubbly we don't do VIP shit so we just went to the crowded place. Leroy:"let's go buy ourselves something to drink" Me:"right behind you, the others will find us a spot right? " Una:" yeah sure just hurry up" Leroy:"come my love" He pulled on me you know I felt watched the whole freaking time but I just brushed it off. Leroy and I just went to buy ourselves some beers and told the bar man to keep on bringing them until we say no. We took the beers and just went to the girls well Leroy mixed up our bubbly and believe me when it has weed it's more than enough to make a person happy cause we were busy dancing like crazy people but having fun while at it. I was dancing so closely to Leroy you'd think we are dating but I was keeping him away from girls just for tonight please. He had his head on my shoulder sometimes kissing my neck giving me love bites while at it. I was literally high and tipsy I

turned around to face Leroy all smiley. Him:"you are high already? " Me:" are you crazy of course not" We continued dancing with my hands wrapped around his neck he leaned over and just kissed me I pulled away and just went to puff on the bubbly and then shared the smoke with Leroy this is how we spend our weekends. Him:"happy birthday buddy" Me:"thanks and this is the best birthday gift ever" Him:"only the best for you... Now can I go and look for a Birch to screw this stuff made me horny" I burst out laughing Him:"come on just let me disappear for a bit". Me:"but you are my dance partner I mean they are dancing together who will I dance with?" Him:"you na give me ala cookie?" Me:"me save ala cookie for ala right guy" We just laughed at our stupidity. Him:"ala lips?" Me:"fire away" He smirked and just leaned over to give me a kiss and I was about to kiss him back when I got pulled away by the hoodie. I turned around and just found this unknown guy

staring at me. Me:"who gave you a right to pull
me like that?" Guy:"boss says you should
stop smoking and kissing guys" Me:"tell your
boss to come and tell me that to my face now
buzz off" I pushed him away and just shifted my
focus to Leroy. Me:"where were we?" Him:"I... " I
was pulled back again I turned around and
punched the guy I kicked him in the balls.
Me:"leave me alone you filthy son of a bitch"
Una:"what's going on?" Me:"he keeps grabbing
me and I don't know him nor do I want to"
Kuli:"listen here you pervert we'll hurt you so
bad you'll wish to call 911 don't test us" Leroy
just pointed at the guy with a pocket knife and
we were holding up the beer bottles. Leroy:"
leave now" Me:"heyi slyza tsotsi" He looked at
us and just slowly backed out. It was funny
making a grown man run for his life like that so
we just high fived and went about our business
drinking and smoking till sunrise that's the rule
party till the sun comes out. We were walking

back home busy stumbling around I mean it's still 05:30 and we are still drunk. Us:"aw Jezabel o ya nkwatisa o jola no malume" signing
Una:"doesn't it say noTira?" We shrug.
Leroy:"Tira is my uncle anyway" Me:"waitit... What the fuck happened last night?" Kuli:"I love my baby... I love my baby" Una:"shut up your baby is a whore" Me:"guys what did we do last night?" Leroy:"beat up a guy and threatened him just about it" Me:"happy!!! " I shouted Me:" ouch headache alert... So was the guy buff or? "
Leroy:" he was or I think I mean my mind is fried I didn't even get myself a good fuck last night"
Kuli:"hallelujah" Leroy:"nxa fokof I'm going home see you guys later" He kissed my cheek
Leroy:"take care of yourself pununu" Me:"you too bye" Well I was left with the horny Kuli and grumpy Unathi and believe me I was starting to get sober by the minute and the moment I got home I just threw myself on the couch then I was gone. I was tired and fucked up at the

same time so I needed this. Well I got woken by someone shaking me. Me:"leave me alone" I groaned "go and get ready for church" I lifted my head and just saw gogo dressed in her blue and white Church gear. Me:"gogo I'm sick" Gogo:"no no the devil is a liar my child get up and let's go" Me:"mara gogo just go with Tshepi and the others I won't survive today please" Gogo:"oh Rori I pray to God to save you from this wild life you live he must.... " Me:" okay okay I'll go just don't start preaching gogo please" She smiled and just clapped her hands. Gogo:"hurry hurry you'll find some hot water in my bedroom" Me:"yes gogo" I rolled out of the couch just to collide with the floor my gogo just burst out laughing at me. Worst after party ever but I got up and quickly dusted myself up I went to take the bath a refreshing one for that matter problem I was busy dosing off. I got out and lotioned myself I put on my long royal blue skirt with a white long sleeves tshirt and the

denim jacket from last night, I put on some black and gold gladiator sandals. I wrapped a doek around my head and just went to spill the water out. I went back inside and just took my Bible and cellphone remember I have one now. I went back to the living room just to find gogo in the kitchen busy eating. Me:"let's go" I yawned Gogo:"oh my poor grandchild you won't last even the first two hours" Me:"I'll survive gogo anyway the twins won't look after you so I'll survive now let's go" Please say I can stay please say it.. Gogo:"you are such an angel" All hope for civilisation is gone with this woman so I just smiled Lord knows I wish I was high right now.. Me:"let's go please before you are late" I walked out and she followed right behind me I know my friends are sleeping right now but this side I'm awake going to church how is that fair when we drunk and smoked together last night but now I'm the one feeling the pain. God shall provide well we went to church and I didn't dose

of at all . It was a beautiful service too but the only problem they extended the knock out time from 1pm to 3pm I was really trying my best and when the day was over and we closed off with a prayer I was happy that I'd be going to sleep like in my bed and stuff yay.

[03/08, 12:39] Mk: My handsome monster-Our holy matrimony EPISODE 003 . . . I got home after the church service I was walking slowly behind my grandmother and the twins Lord know I need something to heal the hangover cause I was dying from a headache.

Gogo:"hurry up" Me:"gogo my head is killing me I'll catch up" Gogo:"I don't think you'll even go to school tomorrow" Me:"I'll be fine" I saw my friends two houses away from Leroy's house just what I need. Me:"gogo can you hold my Bible for me I'll find you at home" Gogo:"where are you going?" Me:"to see my friends... Lerato hold this and be careful with it" She took the Bible out of my hand and I just hurried to my

friends passing this blue car on the other side the driver lowered the window and just gave me this weird look. I'm not a runner but I found myself running for dear life actually I wouldn't call it running cause I just held on to my skirt and hurried taking not so womanly steps. I got to the others busy looking behind me, when I finally arrived I just hid behind Leroy. Una:"and then who is chasing you?" Me:"there is a blue car parked right opposite my house and the owner was just giving me funny looks" Leroy:"did you see who it was?" I shrug Me:"he's ugly though that's all I know he's ugly that I know for sure" Kuli:"what if it's the guy we beat up last night?" Me:"so why is he giving me funny looks? I don't even remember him" Leroy:"he won't do anything to you while I'm still alive" Me:"ncoah my superhero..." I kissed his cheek and just decided to go and stand in between his legs, he wrapped his arms around me. Kuli:"want something to smoke?" Me:"please

yoh Church was a killer it was like they were singing in my head" They all laughed and Kuli just gave me her cigarette. You know when you were craving something for days and then you finally get it that's how excited I was I just puffed away with my eyes closed taking in the smoke. Leroy:"damn they starve you at that church of yours" Me:"have you ever seen a pastor give out cigarettes to his congregation?" Una:"mine does" Me:"you don't attend Church don't lie to us" Leroy:"why did you go to church after a night out?" Me:"grandma issues" Leroy:"eish gogo though she's trying to finish the mother of my kids though" Una:" I always forget that you are such a dreamer Roy" Me:" she's playing we'll have thousands and thousands of babies don't you worry " Well our topics all stupid and stuff especially when we are high we smoked weed and that just makes me hungry like crazy so we all went home to eat and rest the car was still there so whatever I

don't care anymore watch me don't watch me I don't care. I got home and found Tshepi dishing up. Me:"yay food" Tshepi:"I'm not your friend I won't cook for you while you are gallivanting the streets" Me:"yipidy yap yap.. You always complain you'll die young and pale" Tshepi:"nxa you are not getting anything" Me:"gogo" I screamed with tears already streaming down my cheeks believe me when I'm high I quickly shed tears, I walked into gogo's room Me:"gogo Tshepi hates me" Gogo:"what did she do?" Me:"she doesn't want to give me food she's calling me names" Gogo:"I'm sorry my child... Just go and take your food if she does something I'll deal with her" Me:"really gogo" Gogo:"yes my love go and eat". Me:"Thank you gogo" I ran out of the room with a huge smile on my face I'm gogo's little girl Tshepi just likes to act tough I went to the kitchen and just took a plate I sat down and just started munching away. Tshepi:"who gave you that?" Me:"I dunno"

Tshepi:"you are disrespectful do you know that?"
" Me:" so you say but I so wish mom and dad
haunt your sorry ass" Winter:"stop it you two
can't you just get along for once?" Me:"ask her
she's always on my case and I don't know why"
Tshepi:"cause you bore me" Me:"don't worry the
feeling is mutual I hate you" Winter:"mom and
dad would be so disappointed with you two"
Me:"then they shouldn't have left how about
that? Now we are stuck here in a place where
we can't even breath" Winter:" don't talk like that
Rori" Tshepi:"she's disrespectful" Me:"you are
one to talk you and your skwata camp... Before
you judge my lifestyle why not ask yourself how
I feel about being here? Sleeping with you and
your baby who's always making noise?"
Winter:"stop it okay please before grandma
hears you" Tshepi:"you think I enjoy living with
you? I hate you" Me:"I hate you too Tshepi and I
ain't playing if I had to choose between you and
her I'd choose Winter" Tshepi:"I'll slap you"

Me:"you wouldn't dare " I just stood up and stood in front of her. Winter:" you bore me when you are high Rori just seat down" Me:"who said I'm high? Do I look high to you?" Winter:"I'll beat you don't try me" Me:"mxm try it I swear to God I'll skin you alive... I'm supposed to be eating but you two are busy ganging up on me"

Tshepi:"don't eat vele" Me:"you wish I'm going to eat as much as I like gogo bought this products" I went back to my food if they think I won't eat cause of them they are crazy I finished my food and went to pour myself some juice I'm good at provoking Tshepi and I love every part of it but I just decided to go and do my homeworks I still have school tomorrow and I better be prepared. After all the studying and equations solving I went out for a cigarette I mean it'll help me sleep a bit this house has guards and I don't know when we hired them cause I don't think can afford them but now we have two cars guarding us anyway I just leaned

against the wall and continued smoking when my phone rang from an unknown number. I answered in a frightened tone I mean only my family and friends know this number and I have theirs. Me:"Rorisho hello". Caller:"I thought I told you to stop smoking" Me:"who the fuck are you to tell me what to do?" He chuckled bringing shivers down my spine. Me:"stop watching me and get yourself something to do get yourself a job you fucking pervet" Caller:"second time swearing at me you are one brave girl ain't you?" Me:"brave is my middle name and screwing up weirdos like you is my game now fuck off" Caller:"oh Rori you see I want you and I will get you that you can count on" Me:"shaggy and scooby doo scare me better than you" Caller:"you'll be scared when you see granny crying out for you" Me:"leave my grandmother alone you idiotic plump face" Caller:"that's much better I hit a nerve" Me:"don't push me" I even threw my cigarette on the ground and

stepped on it. Caller:"I said I want you and I will get you so stop smoking, drinking and kissing that floppy boy of yours I don't like it" Me:"you just had to go there why don't you get out of here so that I can see your ugly face" He kept quiet so I just picked up a rock and threw it at the car in front Me:"get your ugly ass out of here and tell me that to my face" Caller:"you'll pay for that window" Me:"screw you" I hung up and turned around walking to the house. [message alert] "I like your ass XXX" I just deleted the text and went inside I went straight to my room and just went straight to bed ain't nobody who is going to threaten me using my granny cause boy it's about to get ugly let's just say my entire family I may hate my siblings but I'll killl you if you even try it. Next Day "I got loyalty got royalty inside my DNA" I just rolled out of bed and just switched off my alarm Haa another good morning Hello Monday Hello no smoking day yep I don't smoke from Monday to

Thursday. I Firstly fixed up my uniform and shoes then I went to put on some water, I went to make the bed took a bath and wore my school uniform which is a grey short skirt and a white long sleeves shirt and the grey and white Jersey. I put on some white socks, school shoes and I combed my afro and just made two neat buns I put on my face cream and diamond stud earrings. I went to Winter's room I put on her perfume and just took R20 she's not home so it's free for all I have morning study so yeah I'm early than anyone else. I took my stuff and just walked out I texted Leroy he's the first person I pick up anyway well he came out busy dressing up this guy is just a load of work.

Him:"lovey" Me:"sweety I see you woke up late"

Him:"hangover it's still playing with my head"

Me:"you still have a long way to go Hey, come let me help you" I turned him to look at me and just helped him put on his tie. Me:"you look handsome with this on" Him:"if you say that I

agree with you" Me:"mxm let's go" I pat his cheek and just held his hand we walked to get the others hand in hand like that if his girlfriend saw me she'd kill me.

[03/08, 12:39] Mk: My handsome monster-Our holy Matrimony . . EPISODE 4 . . The after school bell finally rang and I was the most excited including Leroy I quickly took my bag and walked out to Leroy at the door. Leroy:"my love". I chuckled and just playfully slapped him. Me:"you have to do better than that Lee I'm hard to impress" Leroy:"so I have noticed but I'll keep on trying" Me:"trying never killed anyone" "What never killed anyone" Leroy:"eavesdropping Una" Una:"my ears don't have covers you know and you are not whispering either" Kuli:"let's get out of here before we are called to come and clean"

We hate cleaning and we never clean no matter how many times we visit the principal's office we never clean. Well we walked out of the school yard when the others took out their

cigarettes and lit them. "Woo" There was commotion over this orange Bentley that just parked ahead of us. Leroy:"dang babe I'll buy you that car one day is one day" Kuli:"why don't you two date already geez it's starting to irritate me this game of yours" Leroy:"who said we are playing?" Kuli:"so you are dating?" Me:"no" Kuli:"but you are always smooching and calling each other sweet names" Leroy:"cause we want to and we can" Kuli:"it's boring just date and fuck each other already, or what Una? Una are you listening? UNATHI?!" She shouted bringing Unathi back to life the whole time she was staring at the car. Una:"what's wrong?" Me:"we should be asking you that, I mean you are staring at that car like it's your uncle's car" She just clapped once Una:"so all of you mean to tell me that you don't know who that is?" I looked at the car and there stood this guy in denim jeans, a white T-shirt and black/blue jacket with shades and sneakers. I shook my head Kuli:"oh

my goodness guys that's... Ahhh" She screamed
Me:"whose ahh and what does he do?"
Una:"That's Lwazi Mkhize" Me:"what does he do
to have girls jumping up and down like they are
crazy?" I pointed at Kuli who was busy fanning
herself Leroy:"he's just a rich kid with a famous
mother and stuff" Kuli:"he's rich too" I rolled my
eyes Me:"can we go now?" Kuli:"I so want his
autograph" Me:"geez it won't make you any rich"
Kuli:"please let's go" Me:"it's congested there
can't you see it they'll probably step on you"
Una:"or not...look he's coming this way" For real
the guy was walking our way I mean why are
girls crying over him?_ He looks like an arrogant
snob Kuli and Una were star struck #eww
well Leroy and I just kept our cool. "Afternoon"
Okay he's got that deep manly voice that just
drove my friends crazy with his silly guards.
Who would kidnapped your snobbish ass
though. Kuli:"OMG can I get your autograph" "Of
course" Una;"me too" He smiled broadly

Me:"let's go Lee" "Actually I'm here for you Rorisho" The girls stared at me Una:"you know each other?" Me:"eww hell no I don't know him" "Well I know you and I'd like to talk to you" Me:"talk I'm listening" "Privately" Me:"I don't do "privately" with strangers" He extended his hand out for a handshake I just looked at it and folded my arms. Me:"I don't do handshakes" He smirked and took off his shades. "Believe me you'll want to hear what i have to say" Kuli was busy pointing at the guy behind him. I looked at Leroy who shrug and Una was just day dreaming so I'm lost. "Can I talk to you privately please?" Me:"geez dude I don't know you" "Lwazi Andrew Mkhize, I thought everyone knew me" Me:"well I'm not everyone,so say your piece" He was busy smiling and he looked at my friends. Lwazi:"just for a few minutes" Me:"you are plain weird dude go to your fans they need your attention" Kuli:"you'll find us at the spaza Rori" They pulled on Leroy who seemed like he

didn't want to leave, I leaned against the wall arms folded. Me:"talk" He moved closer to me and just looked at me from head to toe and back. Him:"Rori.. Rori and Rori" Me:"I know my own name thank you very much" Him:"you know what I think... Why don't we go into my car and we can talk a lot better than here" Me:"mxm egg head" I was about to walk away from him when he just pulled me back and his grip hurt like crazy and here he was smiling. Him:"I said we'll talk in the car" Me:"what is wrong with you?" Him:"nothing I just need you to hear my proposal that's all abs,we can't talk here with all this loud noise" Me:"I don't want to talk to you" Him:"but you still owe me for that car window you broke" Me:"it was you?" Him:"in the flesh" He whispered that and just nibbled on my ear. Him:"so do you want to talk now?" I was about to scream Him:"if you dare do that I'll wring your tiny neck" Im usually brave and stuff but this guy scares me i swallowed a chunk of

saliva. Me:"can you let go of me?" Him:"follow me to my car then we can talk" He slowly let go of me and just took my bag oh shit I'll have to follow and this side everyone was staring at me. I slowly walked towards the car the guards opened the door for me and I got in at the back. I looked at Lwazi and he smiled at me. Him:"you said you wanted to see my ugly face remember? But you don't look happy to see it" Me:"what do you want from me?" Him:"that's easy I want you" Me:"me? You're joking right who said I'd want you back?" Him:"I don't want you to want me back I just want you to be my wife" Me:"they really messed you up... Me as your wife" Him:"il'm not asking you should know that" Me:"good for you...I mean go ask your celebrity friends to be your wife I'm sure they'll love your crazy proposal" Him:"i have a very picky mom though she has rejected all my girlfriends in the past" Me:"that's so sad but newsflash I don't care" Him:"I know you don't

but you will once you hear that I have people who are waiting for my command" Me:"to do what?" Him:"it's a secret so you decide you in or you out?" Me:"go fuck yourself I ain't scared of you" Him:"don't be really don't be I mean I'm not here to scare you. But I think you should about granny poor woman" He shook his head side by side Me:"you better stay away from my granny" Him:"be my wife" Me:'go fuck yourself weirdo" I snatched my bag away from him and opened the door but he held my hand. Him:"I wouldn't do that if I were you" Me:"i don't want to be your wife and i suggest you stay away from my house or I'll tell the cops" Him:"okay have it your way then i really tried to be nice" He winked and just let me go why me though. I jumped off the car and just fixed myself up strutted home by tomorrow I'll be famous I swear. He's not even nice about the whole thing he thinks I'll just bow down to him cause hes rich and famous he can think again and this

side i didn't find my friends at the spaza i
walked on my own till I got home my
Granny's spaza was in shambles even some of
the stock was still scattered I quickly ran inside
and found Tshepiso comforting her I knelt in
front of granny. Me:"are you okay?" She looked
at me with teary eyes and nod Me:"what
happened?" Tshepi:"your bad friends" Me:"who
are those?" Gogo:"it's okay my child I'm fine"
Me:"but gogo who did this?" Gogo:"I don't know
they had their faces covered" Tshepi:"I'm sure
you stole from someone dangerous this time" I
looked up at her and just clicked my tongue.
Gogo:"you didn't steal from anyone right Rori?"
Me:"no grandma I.." _ [Phone rings] I took out my
phone and it was an unknown number calling.
Me:"Rori's phone hello" Caller:"my future
wife...how are you!" Me:"the answer is still no"
He laughed Him:"how is your grandma? I hope
she wasn't hurt" Me:"what?" I quickly stood up
this guy is messing with me for real I walked

outside. Me:"are you crazy? You could have hurt her". Him:"could have but they didn't this time"
Me:"this time? What do you mean by that?"
Him:" well let's just say I don't know what my boys will do next time around" Me:"you such a dog fuck I hate you" Him:"you started this and..."
I just hung up and went back to the only person I care about and knowing that all of this is happening cause of me actually kills me

[03/08, 12:39] Mk: My handsome monster-Our holy matrimony . . . EPISODE 5 . . . My entire day was ruined by this horny rich snob son of a bitch decided to attack my family I just found myself lighting up a cigarette even though I don't smoke from Mondays to Thursday but I gotta think I mean what does he want I'm not rich nor am I famous why does he come after me huh. I felt like crying every time I looked at my granny I'm not high just that my heart breaks when I see her limping like that,she just had a cramp and for an elderly

woman with knee problems I had lost my appetite cause it was silence at the dinner table. [Phone rings] It was that prick Lwazi so I just picked up. Me:"what do you want?" Him:"to see you..." Me:"are you crazy people are sleeping at this time not meeting you plump face" Him:"come on just a few minutes I promise" Me:"you are crazy do you know that?" Him:"I'm outside your house" I hung up and just put on my jersey. Me:"I'll be back gogo..." Tshepi:"where are you going?" Me:"shut up...just make sure gogo goes to bed" I took the cigarette behind my ear and just lit it walking out I can't believe I'm going to meet with someone who hurt my granny. He was leaning against his door, in black ripped jeans,a dark gray T-shirt and a blue jacket with Nike sneakers. I will give it to him he sure can dress and they look good on him with his fade cut. I stood in front of him arms folded, when he just decided to pull the cigarette out of my mouth,

he gave me some stimerols. Me:"dude say your piece" He put his hands into his pockets and sighed. Him:"I'm sorry about your granny... I just lost control and did something stupid" Me:"okay apology accepted" I turned around and was about to walk away the nigga just pulled me back. Me:"what do you want from me? I said apology accepted" Him:"I still have something to discuss with you" Me:"I have to go to bed ...tomorrow I have school" Him:"wanna know why I chose you?" Me:"uh ain't it obvious you are high on rat poison it's making you do the nae nae" He chuckled shaking his head side to side. Him:"see you make me laugh" Me:"that's not charming at all,one thing I know you are starting to piss me off and I don't like that at all" Him:"well we pissed each other off Rori and I'm willing to forget about that and be the good guy but just say yes" Me:"say yes? Hehe devil is a liar indeed" Him:"just agree to do this Rori and you'll never lift a finger in your entire life I'll take

care of you" Me:"I don't need anyone to take care of me Lwazi I'm fine like this...but you...you messed up my granny is busy limping her ass around all because of you. " I was busy poking his chest with tears streaming down my face.

Him:"I'm sorry okay I'll fix it" Me:"you better stay away from my family Lwazi you better stay away from my granny... I'm nothing you could get yourself some rich fake ass fake tits famous bitch to be your wife and leave me alone" He run his hands through his hair.

Him:"that's the thing you are not fake..you are you what you see is what you get and you being not famous is just a cherry on top" Me:"I don't want to be your wife.. I just don't vibe like that and next time please don't touch my stuff..

Good night" Him:"think about it then we'll talk when you are sober" I just rolled my eyes turned around and just strut towards my crib. The car sped off thank goodness maybe he'll leave me alone right i told him that i don't want to be his

glorified wife. I locked the front door and just went to my bedroom I found Tshepi busy putting her baby in bed. Me:"don't bore me tonight please.." Her:"it ain't my problem that he dumped your ass" Me:"screw you...just keep that ballon of yours quite" I took off my clothes and just got into bed, I slept for what seemed like 20 minutes before gogo came knocking on my door. "Wake up you have school Rori" I just rolled out of bed and just wrapped a towel around me I walked into into the living room eyes half open and shit. Me:"morning granny" Gogo:"morning morning my foot hurry up before you are late" Me:"I don't feel like school gogo" Gogo:"your sisters didn't feel like school but look at them now they are stuck here with me" Me:"we love you that's why" Gogo:"go take a bath you'll find food ready" Me:"how is the leg?" Gogo:"it's fine now" Me:"gogo" Gogo:"yes?" Me:"let's take you got a chance to go back to your younger days and then some rich guy

offers you a ticket to the good life well it doesn't come free and if you don't your family might get hurt... What would you do?" Gogo:"it will depend if I know that person and how they behave"

Me:"he's an ass" I mumbled Gogo:"what was that?"

Me:"oh nothing really I'll take that bath now" I smiled and walked into her bedroom I

took a quick bath and just dressed up for

school. I took my belongings and just walked

out with my earphones on I found Leroy waiting

for me I'd be happy but Lwazi just sucked all the joy out of me it's not even funny, well I hugged

Leroy Me:"morning" Him:"morning... Are you

okay?" I nod Me:"just had a rough night that's

all" He wrapped his arm around my shoulder

kissing my cheek. Him:"what did Mr famous

want yesterday" Me:"some weird marriage

proposal don't stress about it" Him:"are you

sure?" Me:"mmh I'll survive... Just worried about

what will happen today at school I mean

everyone was watching" Him:"you are famous

babe... Relax" Me:"i don't want to be famous
okay I just want to be Rori" Him:"then you'll stop
dating celebs" Me:"mxm screw you...dating my
ass" I pushed his hand off and just walked in
front of him. He ran to catch up Him:"I'm joking
come on..." Me:"don't care at all" Him:"so you
telling me this is our first fight as a couple.."
Me:"who said we are a couple? Nigga don't
flatter yourself" He chuckled with me joining in.
Well we picked up the girls and they just had to
ask me about Lwazi I was irritated and Leroy
hated the topic that I'm dating Lwazi as much
as I do. We got to school and damn it was "All
eyes on me I..I see nobody" Lwazi you did me
good today I tried my level best in avoiding
them I didn't go out during break too. "Hey
Rorisho" I looked around and it was Mrs "cool"
Beauty Me:"yeah" Beauty:"can you get me
Lwazi's autograph?" Me:"uh no I don't know the
guy" Beauty:"come on I saw him with you
yesterday" Me:"yesterday died dude so it's in the

past" Beauty:"just a simple signature" Me:"I said no I can't" Beauty:"why you acting all high and mighty... Bitch I ..." Me:"wAiiit I ain't your bitch and you better count your words bitch or I'll crucify you right here" Beauty:"you don't scare me you slut" I just slapped her right across the face I don't care if we are in class or not I ain't going to let some cheap as slut call me names. She replied with one of her own now that got the whole class excited and me being me I stood up and threw a punch we started fighting like crazy and I was venting out my anger with Lwazi at her she just came at the wrong day and time lord knows I would have been nice if it was any other day but no she just had to pick today. When they broke up the fight I had two loose buttons and a cracked lip they held my hands so I just kicked her. Me:"you'll never talk to me like that you bitch or I'll mess you up" I know the shit is messed up and I'll probably be suspended but nobody knows not to mess with

me. They took us to the principal's office and as I thought we were suspended like I care after that stupid meeting I just went back to class and took my bag. I said goodbye to my buddies. Me:"see y'all at home" Una:"we'll pass by there okay" Me:"ayt love you" Kuli:"love you too" I walked out bumping into Beauty on purpose and just walked out I went home with a pounding headache what will I tell my granny though she'll kill me. When I got home I saw a red BMW parked outside this can't be happening not now even. I just hurried towards the door and when I got to the door I could hear laughter I just opened the door and the first person to jump up was Tshepi. Tshepi:"ain't you a bit early?" Me:"zip it if you know what's good for you " She clapped once and I just walked in to find Lwazi on the one seater couch. Gogo:"oh my God what happened to you Rori?" Me:"nothing i can't handle im fine really" Tshepi:"she's been fighting again... Lwazi you

should talk to your girlfriend or she'll die young"

Me:"I said shut up okay and I haven't been fighting just protecting myself... So care to tell me what he's doing here?" Gogo:"oh he was

kind enough to take me to the doctor" Me:"I thought you said you were fine" Tshepi:"no she

wasn't..." Me:"where did you get that phone Tshepi? I'm sure Dennis didn't buy that?"

Tshepi:"Lwazi bought it" Me:"how

generous of him now give it back" Tshepi:"are you crazy? I ain't giving it back" Me:'give it back now" I was charging toward your Tshepi this

Lwazi guy can't just come into my life and buy everyone off. Gogo:"Rorisho stop it please"

Tshepi:"why you all aggro?" Lwazi:"I think its

because of me we had a fight" Me:"please shut up... Just zip it" I walked into my bedroom and

just took off the uniform and put on a blue dress and some sandals I walked back into the

living then into the kitchen and when I opened the fridge it has never been this full before

mostly you can hear your own voice but now it's congested. Lwazi bought all of this he's not going to give up isn't he, I just walked back into the living room. Me:"gogo what did the doctor say about your leg?" Gogo:"it'll heal in time but he prescribed something for the pain"

Me:"that's great to hear... Lwazi follow me now" I walked out and he followed pursuit.

Him:"what's wrong?" Me:"what's wrong? You have the audacity to ask me that? What are you doing with my family huh?" Him:"what do you mean?" Me:"the fancy doctor shit,the fancy cellphone, food and Lord knows what else"

Him:"just being nice that's all..." I sighed

Me:"what part of stay away from me don't you understand? Just leave me alone" Him:"I told you I can't" Me:"and I don't love you so get that through your thick skull and leave me alone" He giggled Him:"I don't want your love I just want your cooperation that's all or pay me back every cent I spent on your family plus interest and

that would be 26 thousand rand give or take"

Me:"I didn't call you here... You helped them willingly" Him:"oh yeah plus material to build the spaza will be here and that's about 20 grand" I was about to slap him when he just caught my hand. Him:"so what will it be? The deal or granny paying for your sins?" Me:"how do you sleep with yourself at night?" Him:"like a baby I mean this deal is dope okay I just make you my wife no love or strings attached... We'll sleep in separate rooms, no sex all you have to do is keep up appearances and spend my money" I kept quiet staring at him. Is he for real though I know I'm all about the money but like this though. Me:"promise to leave my old lady alone?" Him:"yeah she'll be well taken care off and protected but just say the magic word" Me:"can I think about this first please" Him:"I'm cool with that..." Me:"yeah let go of me now " He slowly let go of me Him:"see you around I guess" Me:"yeah whatever" I ran back inside

and just had to lie about Lwazi's whereabouts I wish he could just die and leave me alone.

[03/08, 12:40] Mk: My handsome monster-Our holy matrimony . . . Episode 6 . . . I was chilling all alone in the living room when my granny walked in. I took off my earphones and just gave her my attention, she sat down next to me. Her:"what happened today at school?"

Me:"nothing gogo just a little confrontation with a class mate" Her:"why? What were you fighting about?" Me:"she swore at me calling me names so I just lost it" Her:"so how is the girl?" I shrug Me:"I heard them saying they are taking her to the clinic" She burst out laughing. Her:"I thought we talked about this savage behavior..."

Me:"she came on the wrong day granny" She rubbed my shoulder. Her:"about that boy who came here" Me:"Lwazi.... What about him?"

Her:"he's good boy a respectful young man"

Me:"mmh that's Lwazi alright good and respectable" I secretly rolled my eyes. Her:"you

don't sound excited" Me:"we fight a lot that's all"

Her:"it's normal for couples to fight..."

Me:"couple? Me and Lwazi are different on a whole lot of levels" Her:"why?" Me:"gogo he's from a rich famous family and look at me? I

don't want the lime light in my face...I want to be able to walk around the street barefoot with a cigarette in hand without making the cover of a magazine" Her:"so why are you with him?

Leave him" I looked at her and just forced a smile. Me:"life ain't like that granny... I'll think

about you" Her:"I love you my child" Me:"I love you granny " I kisseed her cheek and just

wrapped my hand around her. Me:"want me to plait your hair?" Her:"haii just get scissors and

cut it" Me:"haa gogo how will you make bab'Mdluli come over every Friday just to buy an

egg" She slapped my thigh. Her:"I'm still your elder Rori" Me:"we both know that it's the truth...

He's always here cause of you" Her:"he just loves his eggs on a Friday"

That tickled

me like crazy eggs on a Friday. Me:"and a little glimpse of my beautiful granny" Her:"as they say you choose to be old and I'm not going down that easily" Me:"oh wow gogo #claponce indeed" Her:"you naughty child.... Go and get me some water" Me:"yes baby" She was about to slap me but I quickly stood up and ran to the kitchen busy laughing, I got her the glass of water and some juice for myself I went back to my granny and we just spent time together busy catching up you know I'd like nothing but to protect her she's the only parent I ever had and she raised my siblings and cousins without complaint, she doesn't judge me for the life I live instead she's supportive and understands when I tell her something what more can I ask for. This side she's happy about that spaza they are building outside he didn't have to buy my family like that. "Damn this phone takes the best pics ever" Tshepi walked in busy flaunting around. Gogo:"where were

you?" Tshepi:"at Lerato's house" Gogo:"and who was supposed to look after your child? I'll take that phone of yours" Me:"hallelujah" Tshepi:"I wasn't gone for that long" Me:"you left a baby alone that's the point" I'm loving this right here

gogo attacks My phone rang as I was enjoying the beat down. I answered with less enthusiasm. Me:"hello" Him:"let's meet" Me:"Lwazi you were here a few hours ago" Him:"I have something to tell you" Me:"I said I have to think about it okay" Him:"I'll be there to fetch you in a few" Me:"will you..." He hung up on me I was screaming and jumping up and down in my mind I was completely pissed to the point where I shot him dead but that's all in my imagination. Tshepi:"you got a date?" Me:"shh please" Gogo:"what do you have to think about?" Me:"well Lwazi wants me to marry him" Tshepi just screamed I'm excitement I just placed my head on my hand and stared at her. Me:"can't you hear that you are making noise?"

Tshepi:"you'll have a celebrity wedding"

Me:"mxm you are just hopeless" Gogo:'you want to marry him?" Me:"uh I'll go and get ready now"

I quickly stood up and went to my room I can't tell my grandma the truth geez she'll flip and do something that would have some bad

consequences, I took out my short denim dungaree and a blue cold shoulder shirt with my white sneakers. I went to put on some water, I

went outside to smoke for a bit I need all the energy for this guy. I went back inside feeling good that the weed did it's job now I can talk

without fear. I took a quick bath and just dressed up I can't believe I'm actually doing this so draining but what can I say. I went to spill

out the dirty water returning inside the house was a hustle I know gogo has questions for me and I can't answer them not now even anyway I

quickly went to my room and took my stuff.

Me:"gogo I know you have tons and tons of questions and..." "Rori they are here to fetch

you" _ Me;"who?" Winter:"Lwazi Mkhize...I didn't know you are dating celebs these days"

Tshepi:"get with the times sister she's even getting married" _ Me:"mxm gogo see you when I get back okay I love you" I kissed her cheek and just walked out leaving the two gold diggers to just fantasize about a wedding

Well Lwazi was casually dressed as always gosh this son doesn't give up I swear. I got to him with an irritated smile on my face.

Me:"dude what do you want? I can't give you my liver it's dead" Him:"hello to you too and you look nice by the way" Me:"whatever so what did you want to tell me?" Him:"so you are dressed up for us to just stand here or go out with me?"

Me:"you just don't give up do you? Don't you have a job or something?" Him:"get in and I'll explain" He opened the door for me I got in and just put on my seatbelt he got into his and just drove off. Me:"where are we going?" Him:"to grab a late lunch" Me:"your mother dropped you

on the head when you were a baby right?"

Him:"don't speak like that about my mother

Rori" Me:"mama's boy" I mumbled Him:"what?"

Me:"I said I don't want to be seen in public with you. You've already ruined my life" Him:"okay

then we'll go somewhere private" Me:"your parent's house?" Him:"I don't live with my

parents and they are in cape Town" Me:"dude you come from cape Town like you left the

entire Capetown to come and torture me? Are you insane?" Him:"I lived in jozi for most of my

teen years" Me:"how old are you?" Him:"23"

Me:"how did you know about me?" Him:"the

club" Me:"what club?" Him:"vinox night club you were there a few months back" Me:"what? Ain't

that a bit weird? You have been following me for months why exactly?" Him:"well I tried

dating famous and rich kids but every time there would be a scandal which in turn angered

my parents" Me:"especially your mom" He nod

Me:"how surprising" Him:"so when we saw you

at the club" Me:"a club filled with girls"

Him:"take this as a compliment my brother pointed you out of all the girls you talked about"

Me:"how great the entire family is involved what else should I know? You kill people?" He kept quiet looked at me then just parked in this driveway. Me:"holy crap you kill people?"

Him:"no are you crazy" Me:"then what do you do for a living" Him:"own a club and two hotels"

Me:"with mommies money?" Him:"with their help" Me:"so you thought let me just go and terrorize a girl I saw in the club months ago"

Him:"my brother loved you and then he suggested I try it out, seat down" I sat down okay this guy is certainly rich. I was busy looking around when he came back with two glasses of juice Him:"my father used to live here then my elder brother now me" Me:"nice family history but now where do I fit in"

Him:"just agree to be my wife I mean you've got nothing to lose" Me:"my sanity" Him:"I promise

Him:"just agree to be my wife I mean you've got nothing to lose" Me:"my sanity" Him:"I promise

you'll just have to be my wife nothing more"

Me:"you are serious ain't you?" Him:"yeah and I was thinking you could go with me to Capetown this weekend" Me:"wow now I have to go to

Capetown" Him:"to meet the family plus there..."

Me:"hold on I haven't even agreed" His phone rang but he just hung up weird I know. Me:"ain't you going to answer that?" Him:"nah she can

wait" Me:"hehe God what are you doing to me?"

Lwazi just chuckled and just put his leg on top of the other one. Him:" it's rude to answer my

phone while I invited you here" Me:"you do know

that I don't care right" He shrug Him:"so you

really don't care?" Me:"yep I don't..." Him:"then

we'll get along just fine" Me:"we'd rather not"

Him:"Rori this won't go away" Me:"if you die it

will" Him:"oh wow you want me to die?" I shrug

Me:"it's an option". Him:"okay so care to tell me

what happened at school today?" Me:"I don't

care" Him:"eish Rori tell me" Me:"I got

suspended for two weeks happy now?"

Him:"why?" Me:"I was in a fight Lwazi and fighting is not allowed in school" Him:"yet you still fight". Me:"screw you for real" Him:"I'm just asking I mean if it's in the rules then why fight?" Me:"to protect myself and mark my territory" Him:"okay...want anything to eat?" Me:"mmh" Him:"pizza?" I shrug Him:"pizza it is" Me:"whatever" He took his phone and ordered the pizza and I was freaking out but he seemed less scary right now. Him:"how did we meet?" Me:"you stalked me and forced me to be with you" Him:"my mom won't like that" Me:"the truth shall set you free" Him:"it has to be romantic" Me:"you stalked me how is that romantic?" Him:"I'll come up with a story don't worry" Me:"couldn't care less really" I took out my phone and just went online just to check if the others are back from school when Lwazi just snatched my phone. Me:"that's mine in case you didn't notice" He looked at the phone and just switched it off Me:"give it back" Him:"are

you dating that boy?" Me:"what boy?"

Him:"Leroy" Me:"if I say yes will you forget this?"

Him:"no I'll kill him and I'm not joking" Me:"oh

then no we are not" Him:"keep it that way I don't

like sharing" Me:"oh wow" Him:"no more kissing

and smoking" Me:"hold up...now you are

messing up firstly I'm not your possession and

secondly these are my lips and I'll kiss anyone I

like" Him:"we'll see about that...here is your

phone" He threw it at me, okay screw that he

seems like a good guy shit I hate him I was

about to switch it on. Him:"put it away it's rude"

Me:"you are rude" Him:"put it away Rori" Me:"no

I don't want to...you didn't buy this phone in

case you forgot" Him:"you like arguing don't

you" I rolled my eyes Me:"I hate being

controlled" Him:" okay please put your phone

away" Me:"mxm fine" Him:"thank you" I grinned

a part of me wanted to stab him to death but I

decided against it so I just sat there busy

fiddling with my fingers, the pizza was delivered

and blah blah I spent half my day with
him

[03/08, 12:40] Mk: EPISODE 7

.

.

Friday is freaking friday and tomorrow I'm
leaving to go to cape Town I actually don't know
why I agreed to all this madness but here I am
busy getting ready to go shopping with Lwazi I
mean he forced this stuff on me I was wearing
my short bum short like it revealed the
beginning of my butt cheeks, I put on a purple
turtleneck cold shoulder crop top, my white
canvass sneakers and the gray and black long
flannel shirt I tied my braids into a neat bun.

Lwazi paid halala

Want me to play wifey then you'll spend

I took my phone and just put on my pink lipstick
I walked out cause he texted me saying that
he's outside and since there was no one at
home I just locked up and hid the key.

I walked to his Bentley and he opened the door
for me pss gentleman my ass.

Him:"you look beautiful"

I grinned

Me:"you look different"

He chuckled and just started the car.

Him:"I'm different how?"

Me:"you cut your hair, got on a chain and you
are actually revealing your tattoos"

Him:"you pay attention neh"

Me:"I don't have a choice remember I have to
know more about you"

Him:"why are you always showing your thighs?"

Me:"i don't have any long trousers except for track pants and I love my thighs too"

He wiggled his eyebrows and with a weird grin on his face.

Him:"you will be staying at my house tonight?"

Me:"that's what we agreed on no need to be asking me a thousand times it's irritating"

Him:"yeses you are rude"

I imitated him shaking my head side to side.

We drove to the mall quite like crazy and I enjoy the quietness of the car.

When we got there I was hesitant at first.

Him:"just come they'll find out anyways"

Me:"that doesn't make it less scary and you are saying they'll find out like this true"

Him:"fake it till you make it"

He got out and just came to my side, he opened the door for me holding out his hand so I gave

him mine.

Him:"you have some soft hands"

Me:"shut up please and no lovey dovey popaye and spinach business"

Him:"got it"

He locked the car and then it began the staring he had to seal the deal and just took my hand into his

Me:"let go of me please"

Him:"they have to believe that we are dating remember"

Me:"your hand is big and heavy"

He giggled and just picked up my hand and kissed it

Me:"lord knows I hate you"

I said that with a weird giggled and 'playfully' punched his stomach.

Him:"I know but we have to seal the deal"

Me:"shut up please"

He smiled and just walked with me to a jewelry shop.

Me:"they don't sell clothes here"

Him:"we are engaged right?"

I slowly nod

Him:"then we need a ring you know some bling bling"

Me:"wow you can let go of me now"

Him:"relax let's go and you'll have to act out your heart now like a normal girlfriend"

Me:"you mean scream, cry, jump up and down and then hug you?"

Him:"that is good too"

Me:"okay let me put my game face on"

We walked into the jewelry store with him wrapping his arm around my waist well we walked around looking at all the jewelry on

display like a normal couple if we'd even become that.

Well I saw one I liked not a big rock and it's not to flashy too just my style.

Me:"I like this one"

Him:"you sure?"

I nod

He snapped his fingers and one of the attendeds came running to us with a smile on his cute face.

Him:"hello I'm Njabulo how can I help you?"

Lwazi:"well we'd like this type of ring"

Me:"yeah and how much is it?"

Him:"just Ten thousand rand"

I chocked and just started coughing.

Lwazi:"do you have another one with a bigger rock?"

Him:"well we do have them but they range from twenty thousand rands upwards"

Me:"this one is fine really"

Lwazi:"do you have one that has an encryption?"

Me:"Lwazi zip it"

He was laughing his ass off.

Lwazi:"so do you have them cause we need it today"

Him;"what sort of encryption? If you want one with your names or surnames encrypted then you'll have to wait"

Lwazi:"well we don't want that we just want the sweet stuff encryption"

Me:"does my opinion matter?"

Lwazi:"no babe I'm trying to buy you something nice"

Me:"but I'm happy with this one and no encryption please"

Lwazi:"fine.. Dude this one but with a bigger rock"

Njabulo:"okay sir please come with me and I'll show you the rings and you can pick a size"

Lwazi:"cool...love are you ready"

I grinned and just kissed his cheek.

Me:"as I'll ever be"

He was smiling his face off. We walked behind Njabulo and we had to pick a ring and Lwazi just had to pick one up for 30 grand

Really Lwazi 30 grand do you want me to get hijacked just for the ring huh.

When he slid it on I just had to wear a smile on my face just for show damn my finger felt heavy like shit

I lifted my hand and just stared at it for long enough to get Lwazi to clear his throat.

I came back to life and found him with that "are

you okay" look.

Me:"this is beautiful even though I picked it myself"

I was really crying and not pretending they were real tears.

Lwazi:"it's a good thing you picked it or I wouldn't get this expression right now"

Njabulo:"well I'm glad you like it and please do come again"

Me:"not happening one ring is enough"

Lwazi just placed his hand over his face shaking his head.

Lwazi:"umh thanks man...come Rori"

He wrapped his hand around my waist and walked out with me with smiles on our faces.

Him:"give me your hand"

Me:"I have two so which one?"

Him:"the engaged one gimme"

Me:"I should have known that this won't last
mxm take it"

I gave him my hand and he just took it into his
then decided to take a pic of them together.

Him:"done"

Me:"please don't do it please"

Him:"do what?"

Me:"put that pic up on social media"

Him:"I won't... Now come"

He pulled me to some stores busy on his phone.

Believe me it was shop till you drop from
dresses, jeans, Tee's, heels and sneakers. He
bought us these matching baseball shirt his
was number 1 and mine was number 2 and
basketball vest mine was red and his was white
so yeah weird I know but he's buying he even
bought me a phone an iPhone 7

I was tired from all the up and down we did not

to mention hungry.

Me:"can we go home now?"

Him:"don't you need anything else?"

Me:"umh I bought the toiletries and clothes so it's sorted"

Him:"and condoms?"

I chocked and just stared at him with a fat grin on his face.

Him:" I'm joking relax want anything to eat?"

I nod

Me:"just don't drug me"

Him:"whatever just get in the car we'll order by drive through"

Me:"okay I'm starving"

He opened the door for me and I got in and so did he. We drove to KFC and we ordered some burgers and milkshakes geez today I'd be going out with my friends but actually I'm stuck here.

He drove us to his house where I just quickly got off and waited for Lwazi.

Him:"what's wrong?"

Me:"well remember when you asked me if I didn't forget anything?"

Him:"yeah sure"

Me:"well I forgot something"

Him:"what?"

Me:"my PJs"

Him:"you'll sleep naked"

Me:"used to it anyway don't sweat it..."

He opened up the boot and his guards came to take the bags inside I followed suit.

Me:"I need to call my granny"

Him:"cool"

I dialed granny's numbers and you could hear the excitement in her voice.

Me:"gogo"

Her:"Rori how are you?"

Me:"I'm okay but tired"

Her:"hard at work"

Me:"no just too much shopping"

Her:"oh so when did you say you are coming back again?"

Me:"umh I think Lwazi said Monday"

Lwazi just nod

Me:'yeah its on Monday"

Her:'don't go swimming you'll drown"

Me:"gogo I know how to swim though"

Her:'there are sharks there"

Me:"okay I'll stay away from the water"

Her:"good i miss you the house is quite without you"

Me:"but you are always shouting at me saying

that I'm naughty"

The naughty part caught Lwazi's attention you wish you idiot

Her:"your naughtiness brought this family together"

Me:"oh I'll be back and you'll be telling me to go to bed"

Her:"I know"

Me:"so did Bab'Mduli come?"

Her:"good night Rorisho and behave"

Me:"but gogo I'm just asking"

Her:"I love you"

Me:"okay fine... I love you too"

She just hung up on me mxm this old woman is up to no good. Lwazi just came back with our food now on plates.

He sat down next to me.

Him:"so you are naughty?"

Me:'it's rude to eavesdrop"

Him:"I just heard in passing"

Me:"mxm whatever"

I took my burger and started eating in utter silence thing is I can't get myself to tell Leroy all of this I don't know where to start but I'll tell him when I comes back I swear I'll tell him.

.

[03/08, 12:40] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . . EPISODE 8 . . . I
haven't slept in another house and with a guy I
hardly know in the next room so believe me I
was excited when morning came I got out of
the soft bed and just put on a the flip flops
Lwazi gave me last night. I went into a
bathroom that's inside the room my granny
would love this. I brushed my teeth and washed
my face I walked to be welcomed by the smell

of eggs they just made me miss my granny I
walked down the stairs and went into the
kitchen, I found Lwazi busy making breakfast.
Me:"don't put rat poison in those" He turned
around with a smile on his face why is he
smiling God why is he smiling. Him:"morning
love" Me:"love?" Him:"yeah you are my
girlfriend" Me:"oh umh I'd prefer Rori it's fine
really" Him:"I'm trying to be romantic" I sat down
Me:"Mr romantic don't... I said Rori will be fine"
Him:"I hope you like eggs" Me:"I don't really do
breakfast especially if I didn't smoke the
previous night" Him:"why do you smoke?" Me:"it
makes me feel good and forget about my
problems" Him:"so you're telling me you don't
feel good about yourself?" Me:"what? Dude I
love myself like this nothing else" Him:"so what
about breakfast? You want eggs or cereal?"
Me:"cereal love" I batted my eyelashes and
continued playing with the ring on my finger.
Him:"people are wondering who you are"

Me:"what people? And what are they wondering about?" Him:"who I am engaged to" Me:"they know this because?" He shrug Me:"you posted that pic didn't you?" Him:"what are you talking about? I'm innocent" I jumped off the chair and literally ran to the room to get my phone I went online and just went to Lwazi's page. I was on free mode last night so then I switched back to data mode. Halala the guy ruined me that pic of our hands is up there marking it's territory

#engaged #Iloveher #Queen

#soon2bemrsMkhize #Blessed

When I saw all of that I felt like dying this can't be happening I went to the comment section girls are out for my blood. "Wow congratulations Mkhize" "Who is she? But congrats man " "Big up can't wait to meet her" Those comments are from boys okay don't get it twisted. Now for girls nkosi yami you'd think they know the guy or maybe they are his exes but some were good. "Man stealer "

"Who is she though? I mean weren't you with Lucy just a few months back?" "Geez you such a whore you change girls every two months knowing you have someone you want to marry"

"Congrats girl hold on tight " The pic was posted Twelve hours ago but already 5k likes and 1k+ comments and then with me I can post a pic for 12hrs but I'll find 300 likes how is that fair. "Rori we'll be late hurry up"

Me:"don't talk to me please" I shouted Him:"just come and eat they are just comments from fans" He shouted back Me:"shut up Lwazi I'm coming" I walked downstairs busy on my phone next thing I went on Instagram and it was there too this guy is so testing my patience but it was sweet to get such attention I know my face isn't visible but the attention people are giving me is just exciting. I sat down still on my phone Him:"and you are smiling" Me:"no I'm not geez shut up" Him:"okay eat up so that we can leave" Me:"can I change my mind?" Him:"don't start its

still early for that" Me:"ayt sorry where is my cup of coffee" Him:"you don't drink coffee"
Me:"why?" Him:"it's addictive" Me:"oh I see...". I went about having my cereal when I heard a shutter sound I looked up and Lwazi had his phone in hand Me:"what are you doing?"
Him:"uh texting my mom" Me:"if I dare see a pic of me on your social media accounts I'll skin you alive" He smiled Me:"I'm not joking okay"
Him:"your face is not visible I mean it's covered by the braids and you are looking down"
Me:"still" Him:"it's done already so skin me alive now" Me:"mxm I'm going to take a bath" I went to wash the bowl I was using and just put it back, I took my phone and went with it to the room. I took a shower and well cause we are going to catch a flight I have to look 'formal'

What the hell is formal. I finished taking a shower and went to apply some body lotion I put on a denim jean and a blue over the shoulder tank top with red heels The others

were packed and stuff I just pulled on the trolley bag with my phone in hand. I met Lwazi at the passage. Him:"why so many bags?" Me:"why buy so many bags?" Him:"okay come" Me:"what? Pull the bags geez you are so not a gentleman" Him:"mmh Rori you look beautiful" I smiled Me:"thanks you look orgained" He took one bag. Him;"you are so not good with compliments" Me:"but you look organized I have never seen you so clean...excuse the pun" Him:"today is a big day my girlfriend is meeting my family" He was wearing a gray hoodie shirt and a blue leather jacket and some black jeans and sneakers white Jay's. We were now on our to the airport and I had promised granny that I'd call when I arrive,so now I was just stuck with Lwazi at the back all quite taping away on his phone. I took out mine and did the same what am I going to do about Leroy though I mean I care about him and I know he cares about me too. Him:"so you remember how we met?"

Me:"at a friend's party which you and your friends gatecrashed.. I accidentally bumped into you and spilt alcohol on you blah blah blah we started dating a few days after hallelujah amen"
Him:"don't add hallelujah Amen or blah blah. It's not romantic" Me:"you are so not romantic" He just shook his head. Him:"you look beautiful though" Me:"thank you..is it okay for me to be freaking out like this?" He shrug Me:"you are so not listening to me" Him:"huh?" Me:"I saw Harry Potter by the window" Him:"be serious woman"
Me:"forget it..." Him:"Rori" Me:"say my name say my name when no one is around you" singing
Him:"oh so now you sing how great" He put his phone in his pocket Him:"now you have my attention" Me:"you know it's just a little too late" singing He chuckled and laid back. Him:"my mom will love you that I know... You are just alike you want things done now or never done at all" I was about to switch on the phone but the sir snatched it away. Me:"give it back this

instance" Him:"we have arrived now we are going to fly" Me:"give me my phone" Him:"come now..." The guard opened the door for me and I got out like the primadona I was. Lwazi got out and put on his shades we are doomed anyway we took our bags and just pulled them inside a part of me just wanted to be invisible the entire time Lwazi was holding on to me we arrived 5 minutes early. Him:"want a snack?" I nod Him:"what should I buy you?" Me:"some Maynard's or Lunchbar or some Lay's or.. " Him:"okay I'll buy all of those wants some peanuts?" Me:"no" Him:"don't get lost I'm coming" I nod I went about tapping away on my phone while waiting for the fiancé and he came back with everything I ordered Him:"here you go" Me:"thank you... you really bought everything I asked for" Him:"yeah I don't want you to be complaining" Me:"such an attentive fiancé" Him:"the vending machine was even scared" Me:"of your ugly ass I know how it

feels" He rolled his eyes I can't believe that made me laugh but actually for the first time I laughed cause of Lwazi Well we went to catch our flight to Cape Town I'm freaking out okay. A whole two hours on a plane and I was praying along the way that we don't fall out of the sky hey I'm afraid of planes When we landed we immediately went to baggage claim, and got our bags Lwazi was holding onto my hand like they said I'll escape and the fact that it had a ring on it all eyes on it we were holding hands while pulling on our trolley bags couple goals and I think im getting good at this fake it till you make it thing. Me:"we walking to your house?" He shook his head Him:"my mom got us a taxi to fetch us" Me:"okay so how should I behave when I get there?" Him:"normal as always except for smoking" Me:"but Lwazi I can't survive" Him:"you'll do just fine" Me:"mxm where is that stupid taxi... Now I have to find something to keep me busy" Him:"you'll go to

the gym or something" Me:"so you are saying that I'm fat?" Him:"geez Lwazi what did you do? No Rori you are not fat" Me:"so I'm thin?" Him:"no you...you are..." Me:"what?" Him:"look here is our transport let's go" He pulled on me towards the taxi well the taxi driver opened the door for us and he took our bags to the boot. He came to the front and just drove us to the Mkhize household. Along the way Leroy called me I was hesitant at first cause Lwazi just gave me the creepiest look so I let it ring till he hung up but then he called again. Lwazi:"answer it's starting to get on my veins" I just answered Me:"hey" Him:"finally where are you?" Me:"in cape Town" Him:"what? How did you get there?" Me:"it's a long story I'll tell you when I get back I promise" Him:"what's going on babe" Me:"umh I'll tell you I promise....I'll be back on Monday" Him:"why didnt you tell me about your suspension" Me:"you were in class okay away I'll be back week after next" Him:"okay have fun

with whatever you are doing?" Me:"I'm going to get baptized in the sea maybe I'll be lucky" He laughed Him:"I miss you" Me:"I know and I miss you too" Him:"and I love you" I smiled a bit I took a bite of my lower lip. Me:"love you as well...greet the others for me" Him:"will do listen we'll chat later okay" Me:"cool I'll call you if possible" Him:'okay" He hung up and I was left with the bad wolf in the car I didn't even look at him I just stared out the window. Him:"love you as well? In my presence?" Me:"as a friend" Him:"hmm a friend" He kept quiet and started whistling this idiotic tune Lord knows I'm scared but I'll act like I'm not. Lwazi was busy typing on his phone. Him:"borrow me your phone" Me:'why?" Him:"just give me the bloody phone" Me:"okay sorry here you go" I gave him the phone and he switched it on and just looked at me Me:"I love granny" He looked away and typed the password. He did whatever it is and just gave me my phone should I ask what he

was doing? No so I just focused on the road like looking at the beautiful houses and I thought I had seen it all when the taxi pulled up at the huge white mansion like from the gate you could see that this shit is expensive you know that TV program called Blue collar millionaires the houses that they show there is so like this one. When the taxi driver opened the door for me I got out still staring at the house well he took out our bags and Lwazi paid him.

Him:"let's go" I took my bag and just pulled it besides me when we got to the gate Lwazi pressed the buzzer and they let us in. Me:"you don't know the password?" He gave me a death stare so yeah I kept my Mphahle mouth shut before I get slapped around. We walked towards the door and then a beautiful lady opened all smiley she seemed to be Lwazi's mom cause they looked alike. Well she attacked him with a hug. Lady:"mommy's lovely boy" I wanted to laugh but I just held it

in. Lwazi:"enough with the hugs ma....I'd like to introduce you to someone" They broke the hug and then she shifted her focus to me. L's mom:"this must be #iloveher right?" Lwazi scratched his head with a forced smile on his face. Lwazi:"ma I'd like to introduce you to Rorisho Mphahlele my fiancé" She extended her hand to me with a smile on her face a real warm smile on her face. L's mom:"lovely to meet you Rori.....I'm Nthabeleng his mother" I dmolrg back at her. Me:"nice to meet you ma" L's mom:"and she calls me ma I love her already" She took my bag from me. L's mom:"please come in I'm sure you are tired" I looked at Lwazi who was all quite and I just nod. We walked inside the house and damn it was beautiful like crazy. L's mom:"well Lwazi will show you to your room.. You'll be sharing right?" Lwazi:"yeah" I was stunned why did he even agree. He pulled the bags upstairs. L's mom:"go freshen up okay we'll catch up" Me:"thank you" I

followed the angry Lwazi like a drunk puppy the stairs in these heels kills me but I did and I found Lwazi waiting in front of the door.

Him:"hurry please" Me:"ehh what's with you?"

You can't just keep bossing me around" He gave me a raised eyebrow and I walked towards him like I wet puppy, I got in the room before him and when he slammed the door my heart shot up. Him:"never talk to me like that just

because we are at my parents house understand?" Me:"but..." Him:"I said do you understand me?" I nod as quickly as I could.

Him:"good now hurry up my brother might arrive anytime from now... So the bathroom is right there" I nod and just took off the heels they were killing me. Him:"want anything from the

bag?" Me:"my sneakers" Him:"okay" I walked into the bathroom I took off the ring and just washed my hands I was really crying now this

guy can change in a flash. Me:"God why me? Why me?" I heard foot steps so i just splashed

my face with water, the devil came in and just stood behind me. He wrapped his arms around my waist I wanted to move away but he tightened his grip on my waist and kissed my neck. Him:"we smile remember?" I nod Him:"what's wrong?" I shook my head and closed my eyes trying to hold back the tears but they just escaped on their own. Him:"why are you crying if nothing is wrong?" Me:"I...I'm fine Lwazi" Him:"them no tears" Me:"my hormones are on over drive" Him:"what hormones?" Me:"my female hormones" He kissed my neck Him:"need help with them?" Me:"tell me you are joking please this wasn't part of the deal and you know it" Him:"sue me for Inquiring" Me:"can you let go please" He loosened his grip and I pushed his hands off and walked from him just to be pulled back. Him:"you didn't wipe your face" He handed me the face cloth so I just dapped my face clean I gave him back the face cloth Me:"can I go now?" Him:"remember to

behave" I nod He let go of me and I just put on the sandals he picked for me. Him:"and you forgot this" He gave me the ring so I just put it on and we walked downstairs all fake smiles and stuff we walked into the living room and found his mother and an elderly man so I'm guessing that it's his father. #meetthefamily

My handsome monster-Our holy matrimony . . . EPISODE 8 . . . I haven't slept in another house and with a guy I hardly know in the next room so believe me I was excited when morning came I got out of the soft bed and just put on a the flip flops Lwazi gave me last night. I went into a bathroom that's inside the room my granny would love this. I brushed my teeth and washed my face I walked to be welcomed by the smell of eggs they just made me miss my granny I walked down the stairs and went into the kitchen, I found Lwazi busy making breakfast. Me:"don't put rat poison in those" He turned

around with a smile on his face why is he smiling God why is he smiling. Him:"morning love" Me:"love?" Him:"yeah you are my girlfriend" Me:"oh umh I'd prefer Rori it's fine really" Him:"I'm trying to be romantic" I sat down Me:"Mr romantic don't... I said Rori will be fine" Him:"I hope you like eggs" Me:"I don't really do breakfast especially if I didn't smoke the previous night" Him:"why do you smoke?" Me:"it makes me feel good and forget about my problems" Him:"so you're telling me you don't feel good about yourself?" Me:"what? Dude I love myself like this nothing else" Him:"so what about breakfast? You want eggs or cereal?" Me:"cereal love" I batted my eyelashes and continued playing with the ring on my finger. Him:"people are wondering who you are" Me:"what people? And what are they wondering about?" Him:"who I am engaged to" Me:"they know this because?" He shrug Me:"you posted that pic didn't you?" Him:"what are you talking

about? I'm innocent" I jumped off the chair and literary ran to the room to get my phone I went online and just went to Lwazi's page. I was on free mode last night so then I switched back to data mode. Halala the guy ruined me that pic of our hands is up there marking it's territory

#engaged #Iloveher #Queen

#soon2bemrsMkhize #Blessed

When I saw all of that I felt like dying this can't be happening I went to the comment section

girls are out for my blood. "Wow

congratulations Mkhize" "Who is she? But

congrats man " "Big up can't wait to meet

her" Those comments are from boys okay don't

get it twisted. Now for girls nkosi yami you'd

think they know the guy or maybe they are his

exes but some were good. "Man stealer "

"Who is she though? I mean weren't you with

Lucy just a few months back?" "Geez you such

a whore you change girls every two months

knowing you have someone you want to marry"

"Congrats girl hold on tight " The pic was posted Twelve hours ago but already 5k likes and 1k+ comments and then with me I can post a pic for 12hrs but I'll find 300 likes how is that fair. "Rori we'll be late hurry up"
Me:"don't talk to me please" I shouted Him:"just come and eat they are just comments from fans" He shouted back Me:"shut up Lwazi I'm coming" I walked downstairs busy on my phone next thing I went on Instagram and it was there too this guy is so testing my patience but it was sweet to get such attention I know my face isn't visible but the attention people are giving me is just exciting. I sat down still on my phone
Him:"and you are smiling" Me:"no I'm not geez shut up" Him:"okay eat up so that we can leave"
Me:"can I change my mind?" Him:"don't start its still early for that" Me:"ayt sorry where is my cup of coffee" Him:"you don't drink coffee"
Me:"why?" Him:"it's addictive" Me:"oh I see...". I went about having my cereal when I heard a

shutter sound I looked up and Lwazi had his phone in hand Me:"what are you doing?"

Him:"uh texting my mom" Me:"if I dare see a pic of me on your social media accounts I'll skin you alive" He smiled Me:"I'm not joking okay"

Him:"your face is not visible I mean it's covered by the braids and you are looking down"

Me:"still" Him:"it's done already so skin me alive now" Me:"mxm I'm going to take a bath" I went

to wash the bowl I was using and just put it back, I took my phone and went with it to the room. I took a shower and well cause we are going to catch a flight I have to look 'formal'

What the hell is formal. I finished taking a shower and went to apply some body lotion I put on a denim jean and a blue over the shoulder tank top with red heels The others were packed and stuff I just pulled on the trolley bag with my phone in hand. I met Lwazi at the passage. Him:"why so many bags?" Me:"why buy so many bags?" Him:"okay come" Me:"what?"

Pull the bags geez you are so not a gentleman"

Him:"mmh Rori you look beautiful" I smiled

Me:"thanks you look orgained" He took one bag. Him;"you are so not good with

compliments" Me:"but you look organized I

have never seen you so clean...excuse the pun"

Him:"today is a big day my girlfriend is meeting my family" He was wearing a gray hoodie shirt

and a blue leather jacket and some black jeans

and sneakers white Jay's. We were now on our

to the airport and I had promised granny that I'd

call when I arrive,so now I was just stuck with

Lwazi at the back all quite taping away on his

phone. I took out mine and did the same what

am I going to do about Leroy though I mean I

care about him and I know he cares about me

too. Him:"so you remember how we met?"

Me:"at a friend's party which you and your

friends gatecrashed.. I accidentally bumped into

you and spilt alcohol on you blah blah blah we

started dating a few days after hallelujah amen"

Him:"don't add hallelujah Amen or blah blah. It's not romantic" Me:"you are so not romantic" He just shook his head. Him:"you look beautiful though" Me:"thank you..is it okay for me to be freaking out like this?" He shrug Me:"you are so not listening to me" Him:"huh?" Me:"I saw Harry Potter by the window" Him:"be serious woman" Me:"forget it..." Him:"Rori" Me:"say my name say my name when no one is around you" singing Him:"oh so now you sing how great" He put his phone in his pocket Him:"now you have my attention" Me:"you know it's just a little too late" singing He chuckled and laid back. Him:"my mom will love you that I know... You are just alike you want things done now or never done at all" I was about to switch on the phone but the sir snatched it away. Me:"give it back this instance" Him:"we have arrived now we are going to fly" Me:"give me my phone" Him:"come now..." The guard opened the door for me and I got out like the primadonna I was. Lwazi got out

and put on his shades we are doomed
anyway we took our bags and just pulled them
inside a part of me just wanted to be invisible
the entire time Lwazi was holding on to me we
arrived 5 minutes early. Him:"want a snack?" I
nod Him:"what should I buy you?" Me:"some
Maynard's or Lunchbar or some Lay's or.. "
Him:"okay I'll buy all of those wants some
peanuts?" Me:"no" Him:"don't get lost I'm
coming" I nod I went about tapping away on my
phone while waiting for the fiancé and he
came back with everything I ordered
Him:"here you go" Me:"thank you... you really
bought everything I asked for" Him:"yeah I don't
want you to be complaining" Me:"such an
attentive fiancé" Him:"the vending machine was
even scared" Me:"of your ugly ass I know how it
feels" He rolled his eyes I can't believe that
made me laugh but actually for the first time I
laughed cause of Lwazi Well we went to
catch our flight to Cape Town I'm freaking out

okay. A whole two hours on a plane and I was praying along the way that we don't fall out of the sky hey I'm afraid of planes When we landed we immediately went to baggage claim, and got our bags Lwazi was holding on to my hand like they said I'll escape and the fact that it had a ring on it all eyes on it we were holding hands while pulling on our trolley bags couple goals and I think im getting good at this fake it till you make it thing. Me:"we walking to your house?" He shook his head Him:"my mom got us a taxi to fetch us" Me:"okay so how should I behave when I get there?" Him:"normal as always except for smoking" Me:"but Lwazi I can't survive" Him:"you'll do just fine" Me:"mxm where is that stupid taxi... Now I have to find something to keep me busy" Him:"you'll go to the gym or something" Me:"so you are saying that I'm fat?" Him:"geez Lwazi what did you do? No Rori you are not fat" Me:"so I'm thin?" Him:"no you...you are..." Me:"what?" Him:"look

here is our transport let's go" He pulled on me towards the taxi well the taxi driver opened the door for us and he took our bags to the boot. He came to the front and just drove us to the Mkhize household. Along the way Leroy called me I was hesitant at first cause Lwazi just gave me the creepiest look so I let it ring till he hung up but then he called again. Lwazi:"answer it's starting to get on my veins" I just answered Me:"hey" Him:"finally where are you?" Me:"in cape Town" Him:"what? How did you get there?" Me:"it's a long story I'll tell you when I get back I promise" Him:"what's going on babe" Me:"umh I'll tell you I promise....I'll be back on Monday" Him:"why didnt you tell me about your suspension" Me:"you were in class okay away I'll be back week after next" Him:"okay have fun with whatever you are doing?" Me:"I'm going to get baptized in the sea maybe I'll be lucky" He laughed Him:"I miss you" Me:"I know and I miss you too" Him:"and I love you" I smiled a bit I

took a bite of my lower lip. Me:"love you as well...greet the others for me" Him:"will do listen we'll chat later okay" Me:"cool I'll call you if possible" Him:'okay" He hung up and I was left with the bad wolf in the car I didn't even look at him I just stared out the window. Him:"love you as well? In my presence?" Me:"as a friend" Him:"hmm a friend" He kept quiet and started whistling this idiotic tune Lord knows I'm scared but I'll act like I'm not. Lwazi was busy typing on his phone. Him:"borrow me your phone" Me:'why?" Him:"just give me the bloody phone" Me:"okay sorry here you go" I gave him the phone and he switched it on and just looked at me Me:"I love granny" He looked away and typed the password. He did whatever it is and just gave me my phone should I ask what he was doing? No so I just focused on the road like looking at the beautiful houses and I thought I had seen it all when the taxi pulled up at the huge white mansion like from the gate you

could see that this shit is expensive you know that TV program called Blue collar millionaires the houses that they show there is so like this one. When the taxi driver opened the door for me I got out still staring at the house well he took out our bags and Lwazi paid him.

Him:"let's go" I took my bag and just pulled it besides me when we got to the gate Lwazi pressed the buzzer and they let us in. Me:"you don't know the password?" He gave me a death stare so yeah I kept my Mphahle mouth shut before I get slapped around. We walked towards the door and then a beautiful lady opened all smiley she seemed to be Lwazi's mom cause they looked alike. Well she attacked him with a hug. Lady:"mommy's lovely boy" I wanted to laugh but I just held it in. Lwazi:"enough with the hugs ma....I'd like to introduce you to someone" They broke the hug and then she shifted her focus to me. L's mom:"this must be #iloveher right?" Lwazi

scratched his head with a forced smile on his face. Lwazi:"ma I'd like to introduce you to Rorisho Mphahlele my fiancé" She extended her hand to me with a smile on her face a real warm smile on her face. L's mom:"lovely to meet you Rori.....I'm Nthabeleng his mother" I dmolrg back at her. Me:"nice to meet you ma" L's mom:"and she calls me ma I love her already" She took my bag from me. L's mom:"please come in I'm sure you are tired" I looked at Lwazi who was all quite and I just nod. We walked inside the house and damn it was beautiful like crazy. L's mom:"well Lwazi will show you to your room.. You'll be sharing right?" Lwazi:"yeah" I was stunned why did he even agree. He pulled the bags upstairs. L's mom:"go freshen up okay we'll catch up" Me:"thank you" I followed the angry Lwazi like a drunk puppy the stairs in these heels kills me but I did and I found Lwazi waiting in front of the door. Him:"hurry please" Me:"ehh what's with you?"

You can't just keep bossing me around" He gave me a raised eyebrow and I walked towards him like I wet puppy, I got in the room before him and when he slammed the door my heart shot up. Him:"never talk to me like that just because we are at my parents house understand?" Me:"but..." Him:"I said do you understand me?" I nod as quickly as I could. Him:"good now hurry up my brother might arrive anytime from now... So the bathroom is right there" I nod and just took off the heels they were killing me. Him:"want anything from the bag?" Me:"my sneakers" Him:"okay" I walked into the bathroom I took off the ring and just washed my hands I was really crying now this guy can change in a flash. Me:"God why me? Why me?" I heard foot steps so i just splashed my face with water, the devil came in and just stood behind me. He wrapped his arms around my waist I wanted to move away but he tightened his grip on my waist and kissed my

neck. Him:"we smile remember?" I nod
Him:"what's wrong?" I shook my head and
closed my eyes trying to hold back the tears but
they just escaped on their own. Him:"why are
you crying if nothing is wrong?" Me:"I...I'm fine
Lwazi" Him:"them no tears" Me:"my hormones
are on over drive" Him:"what hormones?"
Me:"my female hormones" He kissed my
neck Him:"need help with them?" Me:"tell me
you are joking please this wasn't part of the
deal and you know it" Him:"sue me for Inquiring"
Me:"can you let go please" He loosened his grip
and I pushed his hands off and walked from
him just to be pulled back. Him:"you didn't wipe
your face" He handed me the face cloth so I just
dapped my face clean I gave him back the face
cloth Me:"can I go now?" Him:"remember to
behave" I nod He let go of me and I just put on
the sandals he picked for me. Him:"and you
forgot this" He gave me the ring so I just put it
on and we walked downstairs all fake smiles

and stuff we walked into the living room and found his mother and an elderly man so I'm guessing that it's his father. #meetthefamily

[03/08, 12:40] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . . EPISODE 9 . . . We
walked down with Lwazi's hand around my
waist he'd give me a pinch here and there I
guess to say smile or I'll chop you up so yeah I
wore a big smile on my face L's mom:"I
thought you two would rest first after such a
long flight" Lwazi:"nah I'm fine" L's mom:"and
you Rori? Do you need anything?" I shook my
head Me:"I'm fine actually thank you" Listen I'm
never kind to a stranger but Lwazi's mom is just
sending out this warm welcoming emotions
from her and they just remind me of my granny
L's mom:"well take a seat next to me please"
Lwazi:"mom" She shrug with a smile on her face
and just pulled me to the couch and she sat
down next to me. Lwazi went to seat next to the
man. L's mom:"well let me not be rude.. This is

my crazy husband Samuel Mkhize" Me:"nice to meet you sir" We shook hands and I sat down again weird. Well they began asking us questions and mostly Lwazi answered most of them well Mrs Mkhize asked me to help her make us some snacks so I can't say no I stood and we were in the kitchen catching up laughing. [Phone rings] Me:"excuse me" She nod so I just answered the call. Me:"Rori's phone hello" Sniffs Me:"hello?" "Rori it's Leroy's mother" Me:"oh hello ma...what's wrong?" "Its Leroy.. My child Leroy is in hospital" Me:"what?" "It was a hit and run" Me:"please tell me you are joking please tell me that this is a nasty joke" "No he was admitted a few hours back..." Me:"is he okay?" She kept quiet Me:"please tell me is he okay?" "The doctors said he hit his head hard but he'll be fine" Me:"are you sure?" "Yes and a few broken ribs that's all" Me:"I'm so sorry I'm not there please tell him I'm sorry ma" "What's going on? What did you two do?" Me:"I'm sorry" I

hung up and just held on to the table and cried I couldn't breath and my chest felt so congested it was clogged up. It felt like my whole chest was about to blow up. I felt so hot like the clothes I was wearing had a heater or something. Lwazi's mom gave me a glass of water and started rubbing my back. My gut tells me Lwazi did this I know he did. L's mom:"drink this you'll feel much better" She walked away from me I can't lose my best friend I don't want to lose him. I pulled up a chair and sat down with the glass of water on my lips. "What's wrong with you?" That voice just creeps me out it just made matters worse and his Cologne filled the room, I felt him move closer to the table. Him:"my mom says you are busy crying about a phone call... Who was it from?" I kept quite Him:"I'm talking to you.. What's wrong?" I so wanted to shout at him and just cause a scene but I don't have the energy for him I just stood up,took the phone and walked away from

him. Me:"is it okay for me to go outside? I need some fresh air" L's mom:"of course" I nod and just opened the heavy door I walked out of the house and just took in the fresh air but I couldn't stop myself from crying. I saw one of the helpers going towards the gate so i just followed her and walked out with her now up or down? North or south? Up it is so I just walked up the road with tears blocking my sight I would wipe them but they just flowed out. Lwazi was busy calling me screw him I don't know where I'm going but I'll just walk till I'm tired or until I die. . Lwazi Hi I'm Lwazi I don't have the most beautiful track record but I'm trying to change I want to change with everything in me and a part of me hopes this arrangement with Rori will help me do that but not when she's disappeared. I checked the security footage and it just showed her walking out the gate and going up the street I mean we just got here today she doesn't know this place I know its

safe and all but she's still new. Mom:"go and look for her" Me:"she'll come back don't worry about her" I was worried myself I just can't let my mom stress. Dad:"Lwazi the poor girl is out there alone" Me:"she needs space dad and don't worry that poor girl is ruthless so she'll be fine" I tried calling her again but she hung up mxm. Mom:"go and look for her right now before I slap your head off" Me:"but.." Mom:"Lwazi" she shouted Me:"okay I'll go look for her but if I come back without an eye blame yourself" She threw a pillow at me and Rori will have to explain this crazy behavior or hers before she gets on my nerves. I met Karabo by the I so don't need this right now. Me:"hi big brother" Him:"hi small brother where are you going?" Me:"out now move" Mom:"his fiancé left him before they could even say I do he got divorced" Me:"ma don't start please I have to go" I pushed Karabo aside and just walked to mom's car, i got in and first thing I did was call one of my

taxi drivers. Yeah I have a taxi business on the side too actually I have lots of businesses good and bad. Me:"Berry" Him:"boss" Me:"listen I have a job for you okay" Him:"yeah sure" Me:"I want you to search for a certain girl and bring her to my hotel" Him:"do I know her?" Me:"no I'll send you her picture I want you to tell the other guys to be on the look out too" Him:"but I'm at the loading dock" Me:"don't load right now just go and look for her" Him:"okay I'll wait for that picture" I hung up and just sent him the pic well my mom was calling me already. I answered hoping she doesn't kill me over the phone. Me:"I'm still searching ma I promise" Her:"she doesn't know this place Lwazi she could be in danger" Me:"and I'm searching my eyes out I'll find her" Her:"okay tell me if you find anything" Me:"will do bye" I hung up Rori better be found and quick or else I'll chop her head off myself. . Rori What is going on in my life? Who the hell am I? What did I do to be the

"chosen" one? And where the hell am I? How do I get back home now? This lift nonsense is just rubbish I just found myself telling the guy to drop me off at a taxi rank I don't even have money But I'm just happy to be so far away from Lwazi and his crazy stunts. I went to one of the markets and bought myself some skopas I stood there just staring at people getting on the taxis and stuff. "Start your journey back now Rori" That's the shit I told myself. So yeah I started walking down the road busy playing with the skopas with my headsets on where is a car when I need it yeses its far where I'm going plus I'm sober A taxi just pulled up in front of me blocking my way mxm I jumped to the other side but it followed nkosi yami Lwazi part 2. This guy stepped out and holly Molly he's fat please dear Lord please never let me be this fat in my life I promise I'll start going to the gym please forgive me He was walking towards me. Him:"get in" I took of my headsets

and just shook my head Him:"i said get in"

Me:"no geez you are rude nxa" Him:"young lady

get in" Me:"young man leave me alone" He

came charging towards me and so i decided to start running and he came running after me we were running in circles around the taxi.

Me:"dude I know you have to lose weight but I don't want to please" I was breathing heavily

guys I'm not fit and this fat guy doesn't give up

well he caught me. Me:"please take it I don't

care just don't hurt me take the stupid ring and phone" Him:"just get in the freaking car" He

pushed me in and stumbled and hit the edge of the seat with my head then bam lights out. I

don't know how long I was out for but I woke up

with a bad headache, I looked around and I was

in this fancy room white sheets blame me for

freaking out I ran my eyes around just to find

Lwazi standing at the door picking his teeth. He

looked at me and just shook his head.

Him:"you... Oh Rori" I sat up straight still holding

on to my head. Me:"where... Where am I?"
Him:"in a hotel room" Me:"what happened? How
did I get here?" Him:"in a taxi" Me:"ouch...
What's wrong with you? He could have killed
me" Him:"could have but he didn't" Me:"you are
heartless Lwazi do you know that?" Him:"and
she says I'm heartless... I was searching for you
and I'm heartless" Me:"yeah you are...I know
what you did to Leroy" Him:"and what is that?
What did I do to your lover?" Me:"he's my
friend.... And you ordered a hit on him" You I
tickled him cause he just burst out laughing
even clapping his hands he walked up to the
bed and just laid on his stomach. Him:"that
head injury is making you go crazy" Me:"I know
it was you" Him:"can you prove it?" I kept quiet
Him:"I suggest you do that or else you wont be
dreaming when you get a phone call that he's
dead" Me:"okay listen I'm sorry okay I promise
to keep my mouth shut just leave Leroy alone"
Him:"good" He smiled and just kissed my thigh.

Him:"you hungry?" I shook my head Him:"I'll order room service just in case you change your mind okay" I nod I waited for him to walk out i can't believe I'm about to do this but i can't let my friend die like this. I took my phone and dialed the police station back home. Me:"hello I'd like to report a crime" Officer:"what is your name?" Me:"I'd like to remain unknown" Officer:"that's alright what is the crime?*" Me:"attempted murder and blackmail" Officer:"okay who is the victim?" Me:"Leroy Jacobs...a hit and run victim" Officer:"okay what can you tell me? Did you see the accident?" Me:"no but I know it was an organised hit" Officer:"oh by who?" Me:"Andrew Lwazi Mkhize" Officer:" stop wasting my time please have a good day" Me:"but it's the truth" He hung up on me geez what is this guy though. I just threw the phone across the room and it just collided with the wall. I stood up and walked into the living room to find Lwazi on the phone

and the moment I walked in he just gave me a stare and hung up. I stood there looking at him like a wet puppy. Him:"what were you thinking? Calling the cops Rori really the police? When I'm trying to be nice?" Me:"but you did it you hurt Leroy" Him:"how many times must I say I didn't do it?" He was walking towards me. Me:"Lwazi we agreed that you'd stay away from my family" Him:"that boy is not your family" Me;"he's my long time friend and we are not dating Lwazi but you had him hurt" Him:"I didn't do it" he shouted Me:"I know you did" He caught me by the neck and just pinned me against the wall. Him:"Rori accept this nice side of me don't make me Angry" Me:"Lwazi I can't breath....I ...can't" Him:" I didn't hurt Leroy okay?" I nod and he just let go of my neck I held on to my neck busy rubbing it. I was shaking as hell. Lwazi just took my hands of my neck and just placed his. Him:"im sorry Rori i just...i just don't know what's wrong with me" Me:"let go please"

Him:"I'm sorry" Me:'it's fine Lwazi I'm fine" Of course I'm not fine my neck hurts. Him:"we'll sleep here tonight" Me:"what about your parents" Him:"already told them so they understand" Me:"mmh" He just kissed my forehead and let go of me only did I breath properly without my heart skipping a beat I went to seat down and just stared at the blank tv I mean my life is a movie itself why watch fake stuff though.

[03/08, 12:40] Mk: ࠠ My handsome monster
-Our holy matrimony EPISODE 10 . . .

Rori . . I was still staring at the blank screen with tears all over my cheeks. Lwazi appeared from nowhere and he sat down on the couch besides mine. He let out a deep sigh.

Him:"you gotta believe me I didn't hurt that boy if it was my people he'd be dead" Me:"Is that supposed to make me feel better?" Him:"it's the truth" Me:"I don't believe you...Lwazi you are the one who said you'll kill him if we were dating"

Him:"but you are not right?" I kept quiet
Him:"Rorisho" he roared Me:"no" I shouted "we
are not dating Lwazi" Him:"then I have no
reason to kill him" Me:"why cant i believe you?"
Him:"cause you chose not to" Me:"you were
threatening my life Lwazi my entire existence"
Him:"cause I need you here I need you here why
don't you understand that?" Me:"why me? Why
Rori huh?" Him:'you are from the ghetto girl and
your CV says it all" Me:'what CV? What are you
talking about" He smirked and just got up to
kneel in front of me he opened up my legs and
got in between them. Him:"you shouldn't worry
your beautiful self about that but just know if I
organized a hit on your friend he'd be dead"
Me:"that's not reassuring you know" Him:"I'd
never hurt you" Me:"look at my neck then we
can talk " Him:"I'm sorry Rori I just argh...I'm
fucked up" Me:"move please I'd like to watch
some TV" Him:"I'm sorry" Me:"yeah I think there
are already three versions of that song and I

know them all" He stood up and just leaned over to try and kiss I just kicked him in the balls.
Him:"fuck...what the hell" Me:"I said move I'd like to watch TV"
Him:"but...ooh my balls Rori my freaking balls"
Me:"yeah you got too much testosterone"
Him:"just wanted to find out why that boy loves kissing you this much"
Me:"not part of the agreement"
Him:"blame a guy for trying"
Me:"stop trying I'm not going to give away myself to an arrangement"
Him:"give away?"
Me:"Jesus move I'd like to watch some TV"
Him:"tell me what you mean by that"
Me:"forget it"
Him:"come on, just tell me why you don't want me to kiss you"
Me:"cause I don't want to"
Him:"tell me"
Me:"good gracious I'd like to see luscious Lyon and his handsome sons"
Him:"then tell me what you meant"
Me:"it's private"
Him:"we are getting married you know"
Me:"so? I don't know anything about you...why should you know about my sexuality"
Him:"cause I asked"
Me:"don't make me kick

you again" Him:"come on just let me kiss you"

Me:"you idiot give up already please"

Him:"if I gave up so easily I won't have everything I have...so smooch" I was about to snatch my hands away from him but he caught them Him:"just share" I shook my head.

Him:"then I'll find out myself" Me:"please don't"

Him:"tell me" Me:"I'm a virgin" I mumbled

Him:"what?" I rolled my eyes Me:"I told you but you didn't listen" Him:"I didn't hear you" Me:"blue eyes move" Him:"you kicked my balls you know and they hurt" Me:"ice cubes help even frozen peas" Him:"you are a virgin ain't you?"

Me:"screw you" He chuckled and just kissed my thighs. Him:"embrace it Rori... It's hard to find such girls these days. So embrace it while you still have it" Me:*and what's that supposed to mean" He smiled and stood up, he leaned over and just kissed my neck. Him:"it means I'll take it away" he whispered "very soon" He slowly moved his hand down my neck with his head

still over me I could hear him breath and his breath was just filling my ears. Him:"and you'll enjoy it...you'll love every bit of it" He began twirling his fingers on my shoulder followed by his lips. Him:"I'll enjoy it more..." I swallowed a chunk of saliva. Me:"stop..." Him:"I won't force myself on you, you'll ask me to and I won't decline" He continued kissing my shoulder,ever felt so powerless and out of options? That's how I felt when he was busy kissing my shoulders this guy has some big lips and they are warm too Me:"Lwazi please stop...stop" Him:"why do you think I chose you?" Me:"you are crazy? I don't know only you know" Him:"well I want to look after you" Me:"but.... Don't please" Him:"you seriously have little faith in me" Me:"just stop with this romantic naughty talk of yours.. You said it yourself I'll just be a trophy wife just someone you brag about and I'm good with our arrangement" Him:"so you wouldn't mind if I brought a girl to our house?" I

shook my head Me:"bring a boy even I don't care" Him:"well my marriage is dope already but to be serious I still want to kiss you" _
Me:'what went wrong with you though?"
Him:"come on just a quick peck" Me:"N.O no hau" Him:"haii you are engaged but your fiancé doesn't want to kiss you hallelujah" Me:"Amen now if you'll excuse me I'll go and take a shower then call my gran" I stood up and I was about to go to the bathroom. Me:"Lwazi can we go back to your parents house please" Him:"why?"
Me:"just want to apologies for my behavior"
Him:"you'll do that in the morning" Me:"I'd prefer now and my stuff is there" He shrug and just stood up taking his stuff. Him:"you got everything?" Me:"yeah except the fact that I cracked my phone when I threw it across the wall" Him:"good for you...let's go" I just imitated him and ran into the room to pick up the screen cracked phone Me:"let's go" Him:"oh yeah be warned my older sister is a bit of a snob and

thinks the world revolves around her cause she lives in England with an idiot of a guy she calls her husband" Me:"umh is that how you describe your sister" Him:"describe yours" I rolled my eyes Me:"we are talking about you here not me get that right" Him:"then don't judge the way I describe my sister" Me:"okay I'll back off " I opened the door and just walked out with the grumpy ass son of bitch behind me. The drive back to his house was just quite the best situation ever. When we got to his house walking in his mom just jumped up. L's mom:"thank goodness you are okay" I smiled Me:"I'm sorry I didn't mean to cause havoc" L's dad:"where were you?" Me:"well I don't know how but I found myself at the taxi rank" L's mom:"how did you get there" Me;"umh I got a ride there" L's mom:"you should be careful this side especially if you are new" Me:"yes mam" L's mom:"what happened?" Me:"well my friend was hit by a car" L's mom:"oh I'm so sorry dear

how is she?" Me:"its a he but he's fine the doctors said he'll be fine" She nod L's mom:"I'm sure you are hungry... Lwazi get her some food" I was starving Lwazi:"come..." I smiled and just followed Lwazi like I'm used to real fatty foods but no here its a stake that looks like its not well cooked red meat my foot. He gave me the plate a stake,veggies and some slimy shit. Me:"you eat this?" Him:"get over it you'll love it" Me:"yeah see this body is not made from this" Him:"I know but you have to fit in your wedding dress love" Me:"that doesn't mean I should starve" Him:"just taste it I promise if you don't like it we'll make you something" Me:"deal" He just shoved a piece in my mouth Him:"chew it" Me:"this is...God this is delicious" He smiled Me:"I'm lying its not" Him:"mxm so what do you want?" Me:"you to be nicer and less threatening to my family please" Him:"not now" Me:"please" Him:"I said not now just eat your food" Me:"I'm full" I pushed back the chair and just walked

upstairs to our room I'd lock the door but this is not my house so I just laid on the bed crying out for help but who will help me. The crying actually caused another headache so yeah happy headache day to me.

[03/08, 16:02] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony EPISODE 11
His lips met mine and he started the lip syncing gently moving his hand around my thighs. I gasped for air as he moved to my neck slowly leaving trails of kisses I was holding on to his head pushing him down on me. He took a bite of my neck. Me:"ouch" Him:"sorry" I nod he pushed up my shirt with my help we took it off. Me:"Lwa...lwaziiii" I moaned I continued moaning out for him as he made love to me he was so gentle with me. "Rori...Rorisho wake up" Slowly he was slipping away from me it became like a memory this side my body was roughly being shaken. "Rori wake up" I opened my eyes just to find that I was dreaming Lwazi was

wearing this weird smile on his face. I just rubbed my eyes Me:"what's wrong?" Him:"you were busy moaning my name did you just have a wet dream about me?" Me:"mxm what time is it?" Him:"wet dream? I'm right here just ask and I'll do it stop having wet dreams about me" I was so embarrassed right now I mean I was even wet cause of a dream this is why I didn't want to sleep with him especially half naked,I was wearing the basketball vest we bought with some long white socks. Him:"you look so horny right now it kills me seeing you like this" Me:"Lwazi shut up and leave me alone" He chuckled Him:"she has wet dreams about me but she says I should leave her alone" Me:"I wasn't moaning" Him:"that's not what I heard...and I love your moans I'd like to hear them in real life and not dreams" I covered my face with my hands raising my legs up and just screamed softly that made Lwazi die with laughter God he's going to enjoy this

Him:"don't worry I have that effect on girls" He moved his hand up my leg as he sat up straight. Him:"how did we start" I raised my head up and looked at him. Me:"start what?" Him:"having sex who started it?" Me:"I wasn't having a sex scene dream for crying out loud" Him:"look me in the eye and tell me that" I looked at him and just froze when he was biting his lower lip. I looked into his eyes as he continued to slowly move his hand up my leg as slow as he can. Him:"can I kiss you?" I kept quite and just stared at him. He gave me a raised eyebrow and just leaned over, I was stuck I couldn't even move my body only my eyes were running wild all over his face. His big lips lashed on mine I felt this huge shock wave as I closed my eyes and let him take the lead I just let him play with my lips he took a bite of the lower lip pulling on it as he pulled away from the kiss. Him:"open your eyes" I slowly opened them he just pecked my lips. Him:"you are so wet Rori it's like you washed

your undies and put them on again"

Me:"Lwazi sorry okay? please stop torturing me" Him:"I'm just appreciating the fact that you even dream about me" He started rubbing me above my undies I just threw my head backwards pulling on the sheets. He kissed my neck and just used his free hand to grab on to my neck and lift my head up.

Him:"you are so wet for me ain't you?" I shook my head biting the inside of my lower lip. He nod Him:"okay" He took out his hand and just brought them to my face these hands freak me out, they are so tough, strong and so manly.

Him:"work with me here" He just attacked my lips with a kiss. I slowly responded to the kiss and let him take the lead as he laid me down and got on top of me the kiss got heated really quickly and so did his breathing. I tried to push him off but he just held on to me like he was super glued to my lips. I pushed him off.

Him:"uh-uh"he groaned I just pushed him off

again only did he stop this time breathing heavily as hell Him:"what's wrong?" I shook my head Him:"what?" Me:"get off me, I can't do this Lwazi" He sighed and just kissed my forehead Him:"it's okay... I'm sorry" Wow so much for Mr tough guy mxm why can't he be this sweet every single time we talk. He laid down besides me and he tried wrapping his arm around me. Me:"don't please I'd like to go to heaven when I die" Him:" you won't have wet dreams again I promise" Me:"mxm forget that okay please forget it" He shrug with a weird smile on his face He just kissed my cheek and wrapped his hand around me. Him;"don't even think of touching my hand I'll kill you" Me:"but I want to sleep" Him:"sleep I'm not stopping you" I just furiously faced the other way. Him:"uh-uh look at me when you sleep' Me;"Lwazi please " Him:"turn around I don't want to be bumping into your ass" Me:"I just want to sleep please I'm begging you here I promise to never dream

about you" Him:"oh so you were dreaming About me? You agree with me now?" Me:"I'll sleep on the couch let go of me" I tried to move but he just tightened his grip around me.

Him:"sleep on the bed so when you have wet dreams again I'll be able to help you" I just pulled the blanket over my face and faked crying he didn't flinch instead he began laughing and just pulled the blanket away. Him:"sorry just that once I wake up I take too long to sleep"

Me:"but I want to sleep" Him:"look at me then let's talk" Me:"good night" Him:"I'll do it"

Me:"what?" Him:"I'll stop threatening your family"

I quickly turned around with a smile on my face. Him:"but just promise not to leave.. Promise to keep your side of the deal" Me:"really? You just had to ruin the moment" Him:"I did say I need you here... So don't pull out now" Me:"no more threats?" He nod Me:"no more scary monster Lwazi?"

Him:"what do you mean about that?" Me:"just

say yes" Him:"okay I'll try to be less of a 'monster' as you say" Me:"no more controlling my schedule?" Him:"yes but.." Me:"no buts...." Him:'fine" Me:"pillow talk my enemy, my Ella... " He chuckled Him:"why skip parts?" Me:"I'm not Zayn Malik now good night" Him:"so we have a deal?" Me:"deal" I turned around and just dosed off I wonder why I even bothered cause it was already morning. I was woken up by shatter sounds. Me:"stop doing that" Him:"smile for me" I pulled up the blanket and covered myself up but he continued taking pics. Me:"you such an idiot do you know that? And I better not find those pics online" Him:"but you so cute when you are sleeping" Me:"mxm..." I rolled out of bed and just scratched my head roughing up the braids. Me:"stop taking pics of me please its rude". Him:"people gotta see that you are not fake" Me:"they should see that you are an idiot" Him:"smile for me" I raised my middle finger and just walked into the bathroom

and decided to take a five minute shower I can't believe pictures of me sleeping will soon be up on social media I sleep like I'm dead people please it's not how I want the world to see me like that I finished up with my shower and just wrapped a towel around me I'm even afraid of going back into the room I can't do anything without that in my face. I found him busy fiddling on his phone. Me:"what are you doing?" Him:"checking out my hotels" Me:*okay..." I sat down and just applied some body lotion I put on my undies and just wore a black above the knees body hugging dress and some sneakers I put on the head band. Me:"when are we leaving?" Him:"tomorrow morning" Me:"geez I'm sure my granny must be worried" Him:"why?" Me:"I haven't called her" Him:"and why is that?" Me:"I broke my phone" Him:"great now I'm hungry let's go and eat" Me:'borrow me your phone" Him:"after this now let's go" He walked with me downstairs where

now the entire family was there this is creepy I swear.

[03/08, 16:02] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony EPISODE 12 I
was standing next to Lwazi like a drunk puppy.
L's mom:'finally you came down" Lwazi:"she
takes her time it's even irritating"
Me:'great shift the blame to me" L's mom:" I
know he's the problem... Come sit down and
meet the rest of the family" Lwazi:"you'll sit next
to me.." I nod He even pulled out a chair for
me just to whisper. Lwazi:"no more wet
dreams"whispering I cleared
my throat and just sat down with this so
embarrassed smile on my face. L's dad:"look at
them and they are already whispering sweet
nothings to each other" If only he knew hey.
Lwazi:"love dad" The parents chuckled why
though it's all a lie L's mom:"well Rori this is
my first born Mpho and the second born
Karabo...everyone this is Rorisang"

Me:"Rorisho" L's mom:'yes Rorisho Lwazi's fiancé" Karabo:"I know her already... But hello" Me:"hi" Lwazi:"and you Mpho? Why you so sour?" She rolled her eyes and just continued typing away on her phone. Okay weird right there so yeah Lwazi's mom just dished up for us geez it looked yummy but now I don't have an appetite if I haven't smoked. L's mom:"enjoy" Us:"thank you" Lwazi just brought his hand under the table and just started rubbing my thigh slowly going up he looked at me with a smirk on his face. L's mom:"when are you two planning on going back?" Lwazi:"Tomorrow ma" L's dad:"oh and what about school Rori?" Mpho:"she's still in school?" Lwazi:"yes at least you can talk" These two seem to hate each other big time. Mpho:"mxm..." She rolled her eyes geez my sisters are divas but she's worse. L's mom;'so Rori what about school? Won't you get into trouble?" I shook my head Me:"I have a free week" Mpho:"what's that?" Lwazi:"she said

free week what more do you want?"

Karabo;"geez we have a guest so behave"

Me:"umh I mean I was...I was suspended for two weeks" I just crossed my legs cause Lwazi was busy rubbing me . L's mom:"what

happened?" Me:"I beat up a girl in class and appearantly she needed stitches" They all

stared at me. L's dad:"why?" Me:"umh I was in a bad mood and she provoked me calling me

names and swearing ..so yeah fight" Lwazi:" see why I want to marry her?" Mpho gave me

the evil eye this side Lwazi was busy with my pussy I can't even chew I just stomped on his

leg and forced a smile. Karabo:'you okay" I nod

Me:"umh I'm fine really" Lwazi:"Karabo how about we take Rori out? After breakfast" L's

mom:"that's a great idea...and maybe get her boxing lessons" We all chuckled and that gave

me the opportunity to step on Lwazi's leg once more and this time much harder. Lwazi:"ouch"

He smiled and just pulled away his hand, we

had our breakfast in utter laughter and silly topics, well after breakfast the boys decided to take me out as they say. Lwazi: "let's go and change" Me: "but.." Lwazi: "just come" Me: "yes dad.." I followed him upstairs we got to the room and I just stood there arms folded Me: "what's wrong with what I'm wearing?" Him: "nothing just that I know you secretly wishing to change so do it" Me: "I'm fine like this" him: "let's change" He opened up my bag and just took out the baseball shirt and some shorts. Me: "you want me to wear shorts? In your parent's house?" Him: "it's hot outside so they'll understand" I shook my head and just followed orders I wore the short with the shirt. Me: "for shoes?" Him: "your choice" Me: "no please choose for me please" Him: "those red heels" Me: "are you sure you are not gay?" He gave me this stern look so I just looked away and went to take some white boot heels. Him: "I said red" Me: "i like white" I put them on and just

let my braids hang freely. He also wore the same shirt as me and some red sneakers he just wanted us to match Me:"is this what you want?" Him:"we look cute come let's go" Me:"you still haven't borrowed me your phone I need to call my granny Lwazi please" Him:"okay here you go" Ever took something like you own it I just snatched it away. Him:"6780 is the password" Me:"and that means?" Him:"I have killed 6780 people" He's evil cause he burst out laughing. I just followed him out and we went out having a great time with the guys but problem they just wanted to take pictures I'd cover my face with the braids throughout everything. I know I'll find myself online very soon I hate this life your private life is always posted for everyone to see and I like my privacy to bits. Karaba:"Rori" Me:"yeah?" Him:"umh is this your Facebook account?" Me:"which one?" Him:"Rorisho Rebellious Rori?" Me:"umh yeah why?" Him:"are these your drawings?"

Lwazi:"lemme see" Karabo:"you don't even know your girl's account" Lwazi:"lemme see" He just gave Lwazi the phone those pics I don't know why I put them there I mean I just drew some rebellious girls some smoking all that scary stuff. Lwazi:"so did you draw this?" I nod Karabo:" I don't believe" Me:"don't you see that signature at the bottom" Karabo:"that doesn't mean anything....draw something right now" Me:'give me a paper and pencil" Lwazi:"go buy them dude she's lying" Me:"such little faith me in your fiancé hehe clap once" Karabo:"this I have to see wait I'll be back" Me:"buy an HB pencil and a rubber with pencil sharpener" Karabo:"okay" Me:"don't buy a book just buy a diary okay" He nod and just stood up leaving us at the car I can't believe in being forced to do this but I'll indulge them for now. Lwazi:"whose this?" He showered me a drawing of Leroy topless. Me:"umh forget that it's old" Lwazi:"I see but..." Me:"Lwazi it's just a drawing... Take

off your shirt and I'll draw you" Lwazi:"and you will..." I just stuck out my tongue at him. Karabo came back with the stuff. Karabo:"here you go start drawing" Me:"geez where is the motivation? What should I draw?" Lwazi:"us" Me:"you two?" Lwazi:"yeah" Me:'alright... Umh show me a pic or something" Lwazi:"we are right here" Me:"really Lwazi? I'll start with Karabo since he's in front of me" Lwazi:"wait...I'll go that side" He went to his brother and I just started with rough sketches and just drew them these fools were busy moving around. Me:"if you could stop moving like idiots I'd be done by now" They stood still so yeah I finished up the drawing. Me:"you guys know a rough sketch?" Lwazi:"just show us" I shrug and just gave them the diary. Karabo:"you didn't draw this" Me:"hallelujah" Lwazi:"this some dope shit...look at this, I'm going to be rich" Karabo:"so do you have any self portraits?" I shook my head Me:"I just doodle everything down when I'm bored" We

stayed there busy talking about my drawing and shit. Time came for us to go back home, as in Johannesburg home and I was so excited, when we landed I had planned to go to the hospital when Lwazi decided that we go to my school. Me:"what are we doing here?" Him:"to get you back in school" Me:"tell me how do you plan on doing that?" Him:"you'll see come" Me:"I see...well lead the way your highness" . Him:"that's not funny" Me:"I'm not trying to be funny" He just took my hand and pulled me into the yard he's just making matters worse. We walked passed classes before we got to the principal's office and the guards that were with us didn't help at all. Me:"Lwazi I could do this myself you know" Him:"yes but you'd be waiting for next week when you should be back now" Me:"okay you speak" He nod and just knocked at the principal's office we were told to come in and so we did. I sat down and yeah Lwazi did all the talking and I just excused myself I went to

my class and just knocked. "Come in" I walked in I got stares but mostly my friends at the back they just blew me kisses at me. Me:"morning mam" Teacher:"morning Rorisho...I didn't know you were back at school" Me:"I'm not I just came here to ask if I could see Unathi and Kulisiwe for a few" Teacher:"we are busy" Me:"please mam I'd like to say goodbye" She looked at me and I sulked so yeah she agreed and my crazy girls didn't wait to be told they came running we walked outside busy giggling like idiots. Una:"look at you glowing..where were you?" Me:"out now how is Leroy? Any changes?" Kuli:"last I heard he's awake" Me:'you guys haven't went to see him?" Kuli:"no" Una:"I'm scared" Me:"fine I'll go when I get home guys I feel so bad about what happened... I wasn't even here when he needed me" Una:"where were you?" Me:"cape town...but I'm back now" Kuli:"cape town with who?" "Rori let's go" Una:"Lwazi?" I nod Me:"I gotta go see you guys

at home or tomorrow at school" Una:"what's going on?" Me:"I'll explain later okay" I hugged them and just ran to Lwazi who was already busy with his phone Me:"what did he say?" Him:'you can come back tomorrow" Me:'wow nice... " Him:"you owe me" Me:"you are crazy...you owe me your life by doing this for you" He opened the door for me i got in and we drove to my house now the first thing on my mind. Greet granny Second thing: get some weed and smoke I got off pulling my bag inside I knocked before entering and when I got in I found the entire FAM watching TV and guess who was happy to see me yes my granny, I just ran to her and we hugged. Me:"geez I missed you buddy..." Granny:"I missed you too" We broke the hug and I just pinched her cheeks Me:"you got fat in two days gogo? Haii man" She slapped my hands away busy smiling Tshepi:"what did you bring me?" Me:"sea water" I smiled Me:"gogo let me go and put these

inside and go see Leroy at the hospital"

Gogo:"okay I thought you were tired" Me:"no I'm

fine really and you hands off my bag if you

know what's good for you" I just pulled my bag

into my room and took out my stash of

cigarettes I actually feel much better being here.

Me:"I'll be back okay" Granny:"okay greet him for

me" Me:"will do" I walked out and here's what I

love about the township taxis are everywhere I

just hailed one and off I went to the hospital I

was freaking out a bit but I just wanted to see

him. I went to the receptionist and just asked if I

could see him and she agreed I was holding up

this blue fluffy Teddy Bear I walked into his

ward and he was sleeping. I sat down on the

couch near the bed. Me:"hi" I whispered " i heard

you'll be out of here really soon" I held his hand

Me:"I missed you" He flinched a bit and he

woke up. Me:"hey you idiot" He smiled a bit

Him:"you back?" I nod Me:"and I bought you a

friend see he's cute like you" Him:"I see... Now

gimme" Me:"how are you feeling?" Him:"a whole lot better and I'm tired of hospital food" Me:"I know...so can you tell me what happened? Did you see the car or who was driving? Anything at all" Him:'woah detective relax I didn't see anything cause it came from the back" Me:"are you sure?" Him:"yeah I'm sure Rori I didn't see anything" Me:"umh okay then...oh I'm going back to school tomorrow" Him:"that great congratulations" Me:"yeah thanks..." There was silence in court. Me:"umh I think I should go Roy Roy" Him:"please stay we'll just stare at each other" Me""that's creepy" Him:"then tell me why you went to Cape Town" Me:"I'll tell you when you get out of here I promise" Him:"I so need a smoke" Me:"sorry you can't you are a patient remember" Him:'please enjoy this enjoy it while you still can" I rubbed his forehead with a smile on my face I don't know what I'd do if he were to die I seriously don't he's my anchor my best friend. I love Leroy and I'd do anything to protect

him and I know he'll do the same for me

[03/08, 16:03] Mk: Forced, Loveless Marriage-
Short stories

☺

My handsome monster-Our holy matrimony

.

.

.

EPISODE 13

.

.

.

RORI

.

.

I wish that I could have this moment for life
cause in this moment I just feel so alive,alive.

Favorite song and favorite lyrics just describes how I feel when I'm high and give a shit about this life and what people say, get high and things will cease to matter but one thing is for sure all that became a dream the day of my traditional ceremony when Leroy didn't come I wanted to die actually I felt like dying this side I didn't smoke so yeah everything hit home big time.

Today traditionaly I'm Mrs Mkhize but i still live with my granny i ain't going to live with Lwazi just yet it was a Saturday and Lwazi asked me to meet him at the mall to go over a few things about the wedding. So I told him I'll come with my friends since they have been nagging me to let them chill with him if only they knew he doesn't laugh that much they'd rethink their request. We were chilling at the verenda smoking and the driver Lwazi got for us was waiting i don't care he can wait we didn't ask for a driver.

[Phone rings]

Me:"fuck"

Kuli:"Lwazi?"

I nod and just cleared my throat

Me:"Mkhize"

The girls giggled

Him:"don't screw me Rori where the hell are you?"

Me:"umh at home your driver is not here yet"

Him:"don't make me come there and get you myself understand me? I have places to be I can't be sitting here waiting for you"

Me:"hello...Lwazi? I can't..grrr I can't hear you"

Him:"hear this.. If you come here high and smelling like weed I'll beat the shit out of you"

He hung up

Me:"guys he sounds angry and believe me he's not sexy when he's angry so let's bounce"

Una:"but we just rolled another joint"

Me:"gimme that"

I snatched it away from her and just pulled hard on it and gave it back still holding in the smoke. I know when I release it it'll feel so heavenly and the girls did the same we stood up and walked to the car.

Me:"gimme your perfume Unathi"

Una:"okay"

Kuli:"I wonder how you'll smoke when you live with him"

Me:"his house is so big I'll have my freedom"

Una:"parties"

Me:"equals death"

Una:"then we'll go to his club"

Me:"I don't want anything that says Lwazi okay so we'll go to other clubs"

Kuli:"you'll be paying"

Me:"I don't have a job and don't tell me about Lwazi he might track me down with the card"

We all burst out laughing but I'm being serious he tracks my phone so imagine if its a bank card

when I want to sleep out since the traditional wedding I leave my phone at home and on silent but in the morning he'll be angry as the come just love making him angry when we got to the mall we literally rushed to Mugg&Bean .

Me:'act natural"

Una:"always smile?"

Me:"no that's creepy just let me do the talking"

They shrug and just followed me we walked to Lwazi's table and he stopped sipping on his coffee when he saw us I just smiled but he didn't return it so yeah he's fed up. The girls sat down and I just pulled up a chair from the other table I leaned over and just kissed Lwazi's

cheek.

Me:"hi"

Lwazi:"you smell like weed"

Una:"weird"she whispered

I just took out my diary and the pen.

Me:"okay let's do what we came here for... The wedding arrangements"

Lwazi:"I still think you should get a wedding planner"

Me:'and I will I don't want to ruin your celeb wedding... "

"Can I get you anything?"

The waiter caught me off guard.

Me:"yeah umh three orange juices please"

He wrote that down and just walked away.

Me:"so as I was saying I need to give him a list of things they should get"

Lwazi:"I'll deal with my side"

Me:"so why call me here?"

Unathi cleared her throat I looked at Lwazi who was steaming.

Me:"can I say I'm sorry?"

Lwazi:"you can try"

Me:"well I'll try Mkhize I'm sorry"

Una:"welele"

Me:"shut up please"

Una:"sorry"

Lwazi:"can you just write down what we'll need please"

Me:"okay umh the cake you said chocolate is okau right?"

Lwazi:" I never said that"

Me:"in my dreams with icing sugar coating"

Lwazi:"I'm not trying to get fat you know"

Kuli:"chocolate is yummy"

Me:"yep and you don't have to eat you know I'll eat it for you"

Una:"honey moon remember you need to be hungry"

Me:"ain't no honeymoon shit..."

Lwazi:"focus please... What else do you need?"

Me:"dresses, venue,food and drinks, make up and then our guest list"

Kuli:"music,spa treatments and shopping spree"

Lwazi:" and what does a shopping spree have to do with the wedding?"

I then heard those weird sound effects where crickets are making noise and then the bird sound came on

Me:"o-kay so umh do you want the normal white wedding or with a mix of tradition?"

Lwazi:"that's up to you and for a designer talk to

my mom she might hook you up"

Me:"okay and I'll try looking for a venue today"

Lwazi:"it better be available in three weeks time"

Me:"say what now?"

Lwazi:"have fun sweets..here you go don't over swipe it"

Me:"three weeks Lwazi? Three weeks?"

Lwazi:"yep so have fun... Get your planner and stuff"

Me:"I have school I have to study for my exams"

Lwazi:"get a planner shorty"

Me:"so where are you going?"

Lwazi:"to check on my businesses"

Me:"so I should do all of this on my own"

Lwazi:"you got your two besties so yeah have fun"

Me:"so this is for the shopping spree"

Lwazi:"maximum ten grand"

Me:"a hundred"

Lwazi:"five"

Me:'fine ten geez you one stingy son of a..."

Lwazi:"finish it"

Me:'a beautiful woman"

Lwazi:"thought as much now get cracking"

He stood up and just kissed my neck how romantic.

Him:"bye you guys"

They waved back and we were left together

Una:"he's sour today"

Me:'I told you"

Kuli:"and he's so hot when he's angry"

Me:"okay weird right there so umh I'll call Mrs Mkhize"

Una:"mother in law time"

Me:"brace yourselves"

I took my phone and just dialed Lwazi's mom I hope she answers or else I'm screwed. And she answered on the third ring.

L's mom:"hello Rori"

Me:"hi ma how are you?"

L's mom:"I'm good and you?"

Me:"freaked out a bit and we were hoping you could help us"

L's mom:"with?"

Me:"well Lwazi wants me to plan a wedding in three weeks time and this side I got exams coming up"

L's mom:"and you need?"

Me:"well a designer and any venue you know that's cutting edge"

L's mom:"well I do know a designer and he's my

friend"

Me:"I hope he's gay"

L's mom:"of course... And he'll be in Jo'burg next week"

Me:"can I get his number?"

L's mom:"I'll talk to him myself and he'll call you"

Me:"thank you well at least one thing is out of the way now I have to find a wedding planner"

L's mom:"I'll send you two of the most famous wedding planners"

Me:"wow thank you ma that's a great help indeed"

L's mom:"where is Lwazi?"

Me:"he went to check on his businesses"

L's mom:"oh so he left you to do everything by yourself?"

Me:"I got my besties as he says"

L's mom:"well I'll help in anything you need just call me and I'll be there"

Me:"thank you ma"

L's mom:"my pleasure... Have a nice day I have to go"

Me:"same to you"

I hung up and just ticked on the things I have sorted out.

Una:"we can do this ourselves though why waste money on a planner?"

Me:"cause we have exams and Lwazi wants that Celeb flashy wedding and I forgot to ask him about the invitations"

Kuli:"that's pillow talk stuff"

Me:'don't start"

Kuli;'just saying"

Me:"don't say okay...now let's go to the bakery I need a top notch cake"

Una:"four layer?"

Me:"mmh four layer chocolate cake, then we'll go shopping"

Kuli:"Rori?"

Me:"yeah"

Kuli:"have you seen Leroy?"

I sighed and shook my head

Me:"since I told him about Lwazi we haven't spoken"

Kuli:"he's still angry?"

Me:"say hate...he freaking hates me but I'm going to talk to him today"

Una:"need back up?"

Me:"could be highly appreciated"

Una:"well let's go and we'll go see Leroy"

Me:"you do know he'll make me beg right? Like really beg?"

Una:"then you gotta"

Me:"okay let's get moving"

I paid up for the drinks even Lwazi's coffee he's a gentleman like that anyway we went around asking for quotations from the cake bakeries and these idiots are expensive I mean 3grand for a cake just flour and eggs and white sugar but hey they all said it's short notice blah blah blah.

I liked the last bakery's offer 2grand for a four layer cake after that we went shopping and I decided to use half of my money to buy Leroy a sneaker I even know his shoe size after our idiotic shopping spree we decided to go home actually just so that Lwazi's driver can leave us.

Me:"you know what guys I think I should do this alone I mean he's angry with me"

Una:"but he'll listen to us"

Me:"thanks but I'll deal with Leroy myself you

guys go and rest up thanks for going with me"

Kuli:"no thank you for the clothes now we'll slay"

Me:"and Lwazi will slay my throat"

Una:"we love you"

Me:"I love you too"

We hugged and they just walked away from the house.

I went in to put down the bags I actually hid them cause Tshepi so likes to wear my clothes and they are big talk about forcing things.

There was no one at home that means gogo went to her church meeting with the kids and Tshepi went to her baby daddy and Winter is with her blessers so I'll be home alone nice indeed.

I just locked the front door and started walking to Leroy's house I was actually freaking out but I gotta do this sober so yeah I didn't want to smoke even though I had the cravings when I

got to his house I found his mom outside putting up the laundry so I just put on my brave face.

Me:"Dumelang"

Her:"Dumela nana.... Are you here for Roy?"

I nod

Her:"he's in his room I'll get.."

Me:"it's okay I'll go to him"

Her:"okay and congratulations on your wedding"

Me:"thank you ma"

She smiled and I just smiled back I walked away from her into the house, I walked to Leroy's room. I knocked and he didn't answer so I just walked in. I found him laying on the bed facing the ceiling I just sat on the bed.

Me:"I'm sorry Roy Roy I really am I mean if I could do things differently I would"

Him:"leave him"

Me:"it's not easy Leroy I can't if I would I could"

Him:"then don't say things you dont mean"

Me:"i do okay but you dont understand leaving Lwazi ain't easy as ABC he's a mean person if he doesn't get his way"

Him:"Rori leave me alone"

Me:"I don't want to and you can't make me...I'm sorry okay I'm sorry yeah sure you feel betrayed but I had to do it I had to"

He got up from his bed and just stood there staring at me.

Him:"you think your weed tears scare me I know they are fake you are just high"

I shook my head

Me:"I'm not Leroy I'm really here apologizing"

Him:"mxm just get out Rori"

I shook my head

Him:"leave"

Me:"no I'm not leaving till you forgive me"

Him:"don't make me hurt you"

Me:'do your worst but I'm not leaving this room
I'm not"

Him:"what would your husband say if he saw
you grovelling at another man's feet?"

Me:'he'd kill the guy I guess he hates
competition"

He chuckled

Him:"so you want him to kill me is that it? Like
you didn't hurt me enough"

Me:"you are not his competition Roy Roy you
are my friend whom I need back please just one
lousy chance please I'm begging you Roy Roy"

Him:'do you know how much you broke my
heart when you told me that you are going to
marry him? Do you know the pain I felt?"

I nod

Me:'I felt the same pain when I saw you with other girls Roy Roy and every single time I stuck it out and supported you why can't you do the same for me? Why can't you support me?"

Him;"it's final with you...you are officially his property at least with me you knew I'd be back"

Me:"it still hurt and never have i ever punished you or turned my back on you not even once"

Him:"Rori you knew I'd be back but you are not coming back"

Me:"maybe it's for the best I never come back Leroy but I just wanted you to walk me down the aisle since I don't have anyone I thought you'd do it"

Him:"I can't"

Me:"I know and you know I'm truly sorry I shouldn't have came here but thank you for your honesty and I hope you like the sneakers I bought you"

I stood up and wiped my tears away, i walked by the door and just stopped.

Me:"it was never my intentions to hurt you just protect you"

I walked out and just put on my game face I walked out of the house and his mom was not at the front hallelujah I just ran home and decided to go to catch some sleep before the family comes back and start asking questions about the wedding and stuff.

[03/08, 16:03] Mk: My handsome monster-Our holy matrimony

.

.

.

EPISODE 14

.

.

.

RORI

I got woken up by Tshepiso busy pulling on my hair I so wanted to kill her cause she was just disturbing me and causing me unnecessary headaches I just slapped her hand away.

Me:"what do you want?"

Her:"your husband is here to see you"

Me:"and you pulling on my hair? Are you mad?
Nxa"

I got up and just wore my slippers I put on my beanie since that idiot ruined my afro I just walked outside and found Lwazi leaning against the car I just stood in front of him.

Me:"yeah?"

Him:"did you lose your phone?"

Me:"huh?"

Him:"did you lose your phone?"

Me:"I don't think so why?"

Him:"but you don't pick up? My mom says she's been calling you and you are not picking up"

Me:"its on silent Lwazi, i was sleeping"

Him:"well I think you should call her"

Me:"I will thanks for bringing me the message"

Him:"hey come here... What's wrong?"

He held my hands and just pulled me closer to him.

Him:"you okay?"

I nod

Him:"why are your eyes so red? I hope you weren't smoking"

Me:"I was sleeping for crying out loud"

Him:"who made you cry? Tell me and I'll deal with them"

Me:"I wasn't crying Lwazi strus Bob"

Him:"Rorisho don't lie I said what's wrong?"

Me:"fine let me go my skin can't breath with you holding so tightly on it"

I leaned against the car arms folded and stuff.

Him:"speak"

Me:"promise not get mad"

Him:"I won't I promise and I'll do anything to make it better"

Me:"go talk to Leroy for me please make him see that he's my best friend and I never meant to hurt him"

Him:"hell no I'm not doing that forget it"

Me:"you promised you said anything so please"

Him:"no I'll do anything else just not that so forget it"

Me:"Lwazi I'm already your wife he can't do anything now please just talk to him for me please"

Him:"Rori I ain't doing that noways"

I sulked and batted my eyelashes

him:"no Rori if you wanted me to talk to your brother I would not a guy who has a crush on you"

Me:"just make him see that I had to do this"

him:"remember I hate the guy so i won't even waste my breath"

Me:"mxm you are evil you know that just pure evil"

Him:"for my wife I'll be extra evil just for you"

Me:"just so you know I don't have anyone to walk me down the aisle"

Him:"you'll find someone even the pastor can do it"

Me:"I see I'll find someone indeed"

Him:"your little talk will not make me change my mind okay I'm still not going to talk to Leroy"

Me:"I heard you Lwazi"

Him:"and what do you want from my pockets?
Rori stop searching me"

Me:"just wanted these"

I took out a packet of gums mint flavored.

Him:"you saw them now bring them back"

Me:"why do you always have these? Do you
smoke?"

Him:"no I drink"

Me:"strawberry is much tasty"

him:"mmh now give them back they are not
strawberry"

I just opened one and slowly put it in my mouth
busy staring at him

Me:" its just a gum"

Him:"give it back"

Me:"pick me up and put me here"

him:'these days you are no longer afraid of me
you just have you freedom"

Me:"just do it"

He shrug and just picked me up and placed me
on the boot he's right though I have decided not
to argue with him cause seriously arguing with
Lwazi is just like arguing with a tree you never
win no matter what,so I'm going to shut my
mouth and just play nice.

Me:"can I ask?"

Him:"yeah sure"

Me:"you still remember that this is just a
marriage agreement for your mom's sake
right?"

Him:"umh yeah"

Me:"and that the rules still apply"

Him:"what rules?"

Me:"no love, no strings attached and you are

free to do you"

Him:"yeah I do"

Me:"good cause I thought your mom filled your head with dreams"

Him:"what dreams?"

Me:"when she said that you and i will have beautiful children she's lying"

Him:"I know but she doesn't know that this is an arrangement"

Me:"tell her"

Him:"don't even think about it my mom's been through enough and this is the only thing she's excited about"

Me:"we'll see but what about when they come to visit"

Him:'then we'll share a room"

Me:"but you'll sleep on the floor"

Him:"why?"

Me:"just feel safer there"

Him:" wet dream? You won't have them again I promise"

Me:"I'm not talking about that hau just think it's best you sleep on the floor"

Him:"but I bought a bed to sleep on it"

Me:"just for once agree with me I'm begging you" _

Him:'no I'm going to sleep on the bed and hold tightly on you"

Me:"I'll chop your hands off I swear to God I'll kill you I'll chop you freaking hands off"

Him:"gimme my gums I think I'll go home now"

Me:"go you'll buy another one"

Him:"please don't forget to call my mom or else she'll kill me"

Me:"hallelujah I won't call her"

Him:"try it and you'll see I'm not going down

alone, come"

He put me down you'd think he'd say I'm too big for him to pick up but he picks me up like I'm a piece of paper hey how can I complain. We hugged

Him:'behave"

Me:"I will"

He kissed my cheek and just walked to his car and I went home I went to my room and went to my room I took my phone and called Lwazi's mom well she told me about the designer and for venue she suggested her house in cape town its beautiful and all but how will my family get there so since it was just a suggestion I didn't shoot it down if I can't find one that's available in three weeks then cape Town it is.

Monday

I woke up feeling like shit I was studying and stuff that just creeps me out but I gotta pass

and have something to my name not just the daughter in-law of Nthabeleng Thuso Mkhize the film maker and her quantity surveyor husband

I did my normal routine and just took my phone and school bag.

Me:"bye gogo"

Gogo:"the builders are coming today so they'll start with your room"

Me:"ahh gogo let them start at the side or something I don't want Tshepi near my clothes and I can't bunk school I have test"

Gogo:"I'll pack for you then"

Me:"that's great thank you now bye bye"

I kissed her cheek and just walked out, I'm so used to picking up Leroy before school but today

I just walked passed his crib and he was outside too all ready for school. He knows his

way and so do I so he'll live. I found the girls waiting for me.

Me:"allo"

Una:"hey...hau you guys walking far apart what's up?"

Me:"me and who?"

Kuli:"and Leroy"

Me:"mxm that stuck up guy im done guys y'all can be friends with him but im done i tried apologising"

Una:"come on im sure you don't mean that"

Me:"i thought so too but I do he knows where to find me if he wants to talk neh so yeah let's go and write"

"So that's how you feel Rori?"

Me:"yes Leroy that's how I feel got a problem with it?"

Leroy:"no actually it's cool...guys see you at

school"

Kuli:"really you two? You are going to break up this group just because of a Man?"

Una:"Kuli is right we've been friends for years to let a two week relationship break us"

Leroy:" I'm not breaking up anything ask her"

Me:"you so ungrateful do you know that? If it wasn't for me you'd be dead as in dead, but as I said screw this screw me begging you when actually I shouldn't be you and I are not dating and we never did so suck it up and get over yourself Leroy nxa"

I just put on my headphones and walked away from them I need to focus on my test and just ace this shit yes I surprised myself the way I spoke to Leroy but he'll survive.

[Message alert]

I checked my phone and it was a text from Lwazi at least he thinks of me when he wakes

up

Him:"good luck for your exam and kick butt like I know you will and I'm watching you "

I just replied with.

Me:"thank you for killing my confidence you are freaking me out here" sent.

Him:"you'll be fine don't worry you'll ace it I have faith in you"

Me:"thanks I'll try to copy as much as I can" sent

Him:"I said write meaning use your mind not copy"

Me:" I'll make you proud with coping"sent

Him:"Rori don't bore me I said use your mind"

Me:"I'm also using my brain when I'm coping Lwazi have some faith in me" sent

Him:" "

Me:" I'm joking relax I'll be okay...I studied I

promise "sent

Him:"I'll kill you if you copy understand!?"

Me:"yep and I gotta go before they take my phone" sent

Him:" "

He went offline and I walked into the school yard with the phone off I took my stationery and just went into my centre that's how afraid I am I just want to write my horrors and go home before they ask me what I mean we were writing life sciences so that means I'll have to come up with an essay about some part of the body and Lwazi says I shouldn't Copy this guy though anyway we were given our question papers and answer sheets the first thing I did was pray before opening the question paper hey I sin but I'm a huge believer in God ,after praying I went through the question paper checking if it's in order or not and it was in order so yeah I was just waiting for start writing then I'll just

write my rubbish welcome to my life.

The teacher told us to start and then it began people tapping the table with their pens, chewing the end of the pen, the nail drumming on the table and the clearing of the throat like people you are getting on my nerves here I was cruising through the first questions when I started seeing people busy drawing like my people where are we supposed to draw help me out here I don't see a question that says draw just yet but y'all are busy drawing you can't be at question 7 already that's not possible in the human world no I disagree but hey let me focus on myself which I'm not in hurry so I'll find you guys outside.

I can't say I enjoyed the test but I know 50% of the shit I wrote is for sure the truth kill me but I know its for real. I finished 45 minutes before stop time so yeah I still had some free time to check on my answers and after I took my answer sheet to the front I walked out with the

question paper I took my bag and walked to the tuck shop I'll wait for the girls here I switched on my phone and it was like Lwazi was waiting for me to switch on my phone cause he was calling.

I quickly answered as I took my skopas God knows I love these things.

Me:"hello"

Him:"you done writing?"

Me:"yeah why?"

Him:"good come let's go grab some lunch"

Me:"go with your friends hau"

him:"I'll see them later Rori just wait for me outside the gate"

Me:"we'll pass by my crib first right?"

Him:"yeah I'll be there in a few"

Me:"okay bye bye you son of a b"

Him:"okay I heard you"

He hung up and I just waited for the girls then I'll tell them where I am going and they didn't waste time they came running to me

Una:"you didn't write anything wena"

Me;"what? Girl I nailed that shit I tell you"

Kuli:"but you are waiting for us? That's surprising"

Me:"life is full of surprises girl and I won't be walking with you home cause Lwazi is coming"

Una:"he'll drive us home"

Me:"we'll see"

[Message alert]

It was Lwazi saying he's arrived we walked out and and found the sir leaning against a white SUV at least he'll give my friends a ride since we all going to the same place he's always busy with his phone you'd swear he was busy talking to the president or something.

Me:"hi"

Lwazi:"hello... Hi guys"

Girls:"hey"

Lwazi:"hop in Rori we have a lot of things to do"

Me:"and my friends too?"

Lwazi:"don't know they'll decide"

They shrug and just jumped in at the back and I in the front where I'd stare out of the window avoiding Lwazi like hell.

When we got to my crib the girls also got off and we said our goodbyes, Lwazi stayed in the car as I went inside where it was busy as hell I just walked to granny's room.

Me:"gogo guess whose back"

Gogo;"Goliath'

Me:"pretty close but how are you!"

Gogo:"I'm good so how was your test?"

Me:"surprisingly it was okay"

Gogo:"that's good so where are you going?"

Me:"out nje...Lwazi is waiting for me outside"

Gogo:"oh but you better hurry back"

Me:"yes gogo"

I put on my red heels and I was done outfit wise,
I took my leather backpack and just walked out
I found him still in the car so I just got in and
put on my seatbelt.

Me:"we can go now"

Him:"what's going on at your house?"

Me:"gogo thought it be wise to renovate and
add some rooms"

Him:"that's great so you'll have your own room?"

Me:"I guess"

Him:"well I have something to show you"

Me:"what's that?"

Him:"you'll see just have an open mind okay" _

Me:"don't I always"

He just went about driving and it was so quite in the car I just started dosing off.

Him:"put this blindfold on we almost there"

Me:"where are you taking me? Please don't kill me"

Him:"I won't kill you hau and I don't need a blindfold to kill you remember"

Me:"but why a blindfold?"

Him:"because it's a surprise"

Me:"but i don't need to be blindfolded"

Him:"don't make me stop this car and blindfold you myself"

Me:"Jesus are you sure that Shaka is not your relative"

Him:"just cover your eyes and no peeking"

Me:"Oh mighty God please forgive me for my trespasses that I have committed I didn't mean to I swear I was just trying out new things but I didn't know that things will end like this I'm deeply sorry so please accept my soul into heaven amen"

Him:"are you crazy? I said cover your eyes not confess your sins"

I rolled my eyes and just put on the blindfold, after that the car just came to stand still.

Me:"oh my God take me now please"

him:'just don't peek"

Me:"peek? You are worried about me peeking when I'm flipping scared you tell me about peeking what type of chicken polony are you? I hope it won't be a painful death you know make it quick and less painful"

He picked me up I think

Me:"tell my granny that I love her" _

Him:" wow tough girl is afraid of something"

Me:"screw that all I wanna know is where are we?"

him:"couple's paradise"

Me:"we ain't a couple so please put me down"

Him:"okay"

Me:"gently please"

He just put me down his own way this foolish person though.

Him:'open your eyes"

Me:"are we on top of a cliff? Are you going to make it look like an accident? Is that it?"

him:"for crying out loud take off the blindfold before I lose my appetite" _

Me;"oh my goodness you'll eat me"

He just pulled it off and what stood in front of

me was pure bliss. This house was so beautiful more beautiful than you could ever know I was just

Me:"what...what is this?"

Him:"your house"

Me:"my what?"

Him:"your house actually it's our house like matrimonial house but its in your name"

Me:"so I can kick you out?"

Him:"if you'll pay the bills feel free"

Me:"okay you can stay but this I just out of this world it's beautiful"

Him:"glad you like the outside that means you'll like the inside more"

Me:"how do you know what I like?"

Him:"you are a girl like girlish girl"

Me:"so you think I'm easy to read? Nigga you so wrong right there*

Him:"we'll see about that just come'

He pulled me inside the house and believe me it was beautiful like crazy from the decor to the entire house design it's just breathtaking the master bedroom which is certainly mine is dark grey with a balcony like I can just wake up and open the glass door and walk out to see the rising sun tell me this is a dream and don't wake me up cause I love this dream I love every bit of it.

Me:"thank you"

him:"for?"

I shrug

Him:"you are so not okay"

Me:"you should say you welcome"

him:"well you welcome"

We just moved around the crib busy arguing about the color and stuff who would have thought I Rorisho Mphahlele the girl without

dreams will be living here not me.

[03/08, 16:03] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . . EPISODE 15 . . .

RORI . . . My feet were killing me like crazy and the fact that I was doing this whole shot alone you'd swear I was crazy walking around the mall in my short,gray vest and white short sleeved cardigan and some black airmax sneakers with my afro in a clean bun my final dress fitting actually it was the third one cause the first time the dress was too big and second one it was too tight as in tight I couldn't breath so I told him to do it again and better this time I'm tired and this side my friends didn't come with me cause their dresses were ready they were just waiting for tomorrow so that we can do our hair I don't know what to do for real I mean braiding is just the norm of marriages and I seriously don't do normal so I think I'll just wash my hair dye it black I'm not risking it by color damage so yeah I'm always black I was

done with the fittings and the dress fits me like a glove not big and not small too just fit for my body I love my dress big time it's just me without a doubt I went to buy myself some pie and a tropika juice when Lwazi called weird thing is I missed him I haven't seen in the past two weeks cause he was in and out of jozi so I answered. Me:" the owner of this phone is dead like ded dead so please leave your message" Him:"are you crazy? Is that how you answer your phone now?" Me:"its my phone I can answer anyway I want so what do you want?" him:"where are you?" Me:"the mall why?" Him:"what are you doing there?" Me:"Lwazi I'm starving here I mean I told you that I have my final dress fitting" Him:"oh yeah that so how did it go? Fits you perfectly?" Me:'yeah its fine now I like it" Him:"that's great so when can I see you?" Me:" this Saturday you know you can't see me" Him:"I mean you you not you in that white dress even if it burnt holes through my pockets but

I'm talking about you" Me:"geez Lwazi I'm tired"
Him:"you have a driver Rori use him" Me:"fine I'll
be there I hope I won't find any of your friends
there" Him:"I'm alone and bored so come"
Me:"fine I'm coming" Him:"okay love you"
Me;"what did you say?" Him:"hurry up" He
quickly hung up okay weird but I just walked to
the car with the driver right behind me he
opened the food for me while I was busy
munching away on the pie I can't believe I'm
about to see Lwazi while I have a freaking
headache anyway the driver drove to the house
in silence when we got there i was just wiping
my hands I seriously smelt like lamb pie you
could just eat me up anyway I threw everything
in the bin and just knocked I was told to come
in so I did and I found the sir relaxed topless on
his couch with a bowl of popcorn in front of him
and a beer I closed the door and walked in I
threw my bag on the other couch and just went
to seat with him I pat his shoulder and slapped

his head. Me:"couch potato" He slapped my thigh Him:"I'm relaxing after weeks of no rest" Me:"oh and what did you do? call me every two minutes to check if I was with a boy or not?" Him:"that's tough okay so how was your shopping?" Me:"I wasn't shopping Lwazi I didn't even buy myself new underwear" He just chocked. Me:" oh wow really sies on you man nxa" Him:" but I thought you don't wear underwear making it easy for me to take it.." Me:"eww" He burst out laughing Him:"you smell like lamb pie" Me:"I was eating one just a few moments ago wanna smell my hands?" Him;"no I don't" Me:'come on smell them here sniff sniff" Him:"haii man stop it" Me:"sniff it I know you want to" Him:"I'll shove this down your throat" Me:"lamb pie yum yum" Him:'eish why did I call you here cause you are just giving me a headache" Me:"Jesus is great feel the pain I'm feeling" I took some popcorns and shoved them down my throat and took his beer. Him:"yah neh

so how are the wedding arrangements going?"
Me;"they are done Lwazi the cake,venue and the dresses the food like everything is sorted"
Him;"and you like everything?" Me:"yep it's on point" Him:"that's great to know, so who will walk you down the aisle?" Me:"my granddad like my granny's younger brother" Him:"he's here?" Me:'yeah he arrived this morning" Him:"thank you"Me:"for?" Him:"doing this actually putting your life on hold for all of this" Me:"like you gave me a choice Lwazi" Him:"exactly so thank you" Me:"okay now stop staring at me you are creeping me out" Him:"are you leaving your hair like this on Saturday?" Me:"is there a problem with it" Him:"yeyes black person I didn't talk about problems I said are you leaving it like this" Me:" no I'll dye it tomorrow" Him:"dye it pink" Me:"uh are you out of your mind? That's freaky and it might damage my hair" Him:"it's so soft" I slapped his hand away Me:"you'll ruin it we don't know where you were last night" Him:"i

was at home with my friends watching TV and drinking talking about my bachelors tomorrow"

Me:'who said you should tell me all of that? I didn't ask you know" Him:"just sharing since

you seem bored and tired' Me:"tired is an understatement of the year" Him:"shame"

Me:" did you even notice that I'm thinner now?" Him:"umh can I get you anything to drink"

he is afraid of the weight topic and I just enjoy seeing him sweat trying to avoid it but hey I'll have to do with the little things.

Me:"what are you looking at? You are seriously creeping me out" He cleared his throat and

focused on the TV Me:"Lwazi what's with you?"

Him:"nothing why?" Me:"the weird staring and avoiding me what's going on?" Him:"it's nothing

just got a lot of things on my mind" Me:"In that case I'd like that juice you offered please" Him:"I

changed my mind you get it" Me:"mxm so much for hospitality" I stood up and walked to the

kitchen I poured myself some juice from the

looks of things he's planning on renovating his family house that's cool hey. Something is definitely off with Lwazi but what if he wants to call off the wedding can it be that please be that maybe my life can go back to normal and I'm saying maybe cause my whole life now is out there for everyone to see and judge like they know me, I felt hands just tightly wrap around my waist and he just sniffed my neck coming up to my cheek and he kissed it..

Me:"that's weird stop it" Him:"what's weird is this you being right here but seem so out of reach" Me:"cause I didn't come here to be in reach Lwazi I'm fine out of reach like this"

Him:"just a little bit in sight and on my reach"

Me:"you can't handle me" Him:"wanna bet?"

Me:"what's on the line?" Him:"if I lose I'll buy you anything you want" Me:"you already do that's nothing new" Him:"I'll give you one of my cars"

Me:" I can't drive Lwazi" Him:"geez what do you want from me?" Me:"nothing really just

don't make bets you can't see through" Him:"I always fulfill my promises and you know that"
Me:"and now you are breaking a rule put in place by you remember? No sex or love"
him:"rules are meant to be broken every now and then" Me:"hehe you don't say.. Let's see" I turned around and just looked at him busy biting his lower lip. Me:"you are creepy today Lwazi" Him:"you smell like lamb pie what did you expect?" Me:"I'm not lamb pie Lwazi now let me pass" Him:"you so beautiful do you know that?" Me:"umh thank you " Him:"you have a beautiful smile" I shook my head Me:"ahh now... Now you are really forcing it guy please say what's on your mind" Him:"I have one thing on my mind" Me:"what's that?" Him:"this..." He lifted my chin up with his index finger and just smashed his lips on to mine he didn't wait for me to respond he just picked me up and placed me on the kitchen table I swear I'm nothing when it comes to him picking me up but back to

the kiss which he was just taking the lead and his hands were just exploring my body the way they wanted he pushed me up a bit I mean I'd be scared if this was the wood table but it's made from stone so I won't fall. I pushed him off and just caught my breath cause I couldn't breath. Me:"okay umh we have a rule about this remember" Him:"let's break the rules just this once" Me:"you got too much testerone running through your system" Him:"Rori we are getting married on Saturday" Me:"that's what you wanted right?" He nod Him:"but.." Me:"let's say save that testerone for Saturday night who knows I might be ready" Him:"the no sex before marriage stuff?" Me:"blame my granny and the church not me" Him:"argh" He just placed his head on top of my vagina Him:"another slim escape my buddy". Me:"yeah that tickles" He kissed it too Me:"you are creeping me out Lwazi please move away from my vagina and no one will get hurt" Him:"just yet" Me:"okay I think I'll

go home now before my granny calls... See you on Saturday" I kissed his cheek and just took my phone and walked out I got on the car and I was driven home where I found my family and friends just sitting around the TV since the house is fully renovated they'll be spending the week here. Una:"and where were you?" Me:'if you came with me you'd know" Gogo:"Rori what did you do?" Me:"what do you mean gogo?" Gogo:"did you sleep with him?" butterflies alert Me:"umh no I didn't eww granny I'd never" Kuli:"why are you so red?" Me:"mxm I didn't not sleep with Lwazi people please relax..." I quickly stood up and went to my room lord knows I felt guilty I didn't sleep with him but yeah it got heated I took off my clothes and just wore more comfy ones and those are my pjs so yeah, I slept I got my beauty sleep before D-day fuck did I just promise Lwazi that I'd screw him
oh lord forgive me for I didn't know what I was saying. I woke up the next day and as

always my Granny was beaming with excitement when all I need was a smoke so yeah I did my hygiene routine and went with the girls outside for a smoke we rolled about three joints each shared and after we went inside I mean we have a lot of things to do from our hair to nails and then full body massage my mother in law is paying so yeah I'll have fun with my buddies, we went to the mall and i did my hair wash and dye it black and just got it pulled really tight and then got a pony tail bun I really looked like a Chinese fidget we did our nails then it was massage time so relaxing hallelujah after we went to pick up my so beautiful dress and some alcohol then it was bacheloretts party time believe me I couldn't smoke cause my mother in law was there but I sure had some wine lots and lots of them till I couldn't do it anymore so yeah I just went to bed busy wondering what's happening at the bachelors but hey I gotta focus on me myself and I right

and my wedding in the morning I'm freaking out cause it seems like Lwazi wants more than we agreed on. my drunk glorious rest was disturbed by someone shaking me and when i opened my eyes i found Gogo Me:"what is it" Her:"wake up and let's pray" Me:"gogo I have a headache please" Her:"God will have to make way for you" Me:"oh my God help me now" Her:"yes now get up " She pulled the blanket away and just pulled me to the living room where everyone was already waiting for us we made a chain and just started praying and praying till ar couldn't anymore and then we said Amen. L's mom:"I'm going over to the boy's house dear so see you at the alter" Me:'okay ma drive safely" L's mom:"and drink some coffee with headache pills okay it'll get rid of that sour look on your face" Me:"thank you ma I'll try that" She nod and just kissed my forehead L's mom:"welcome to my family" I nod with a smile on my face. She hugged everyone then left and I

went to take a long and well deserved bath after I went to my bedroom just to find the make up artist already there so yeah I sat down in front of the mirror and put on some body lotion after she started doing her thing with my face making me look as fake as they come Jesus Christ come and rescue your child anyway this gay guy came into my room apparently he's the hair dresser and believe me my wedding dress designer was getting impatient for his turn like people stop fighting over me I'm not some piece of meat okay blah blah blah I got dressed in my wedding dress with its matching white heels and darlings I looked fabulous understand me I was like a different person all together and I loved it like crazy the dress just did wonders to my body weight but for real I did lose some pounds stress related problems you don't want to know. My family looked amazing especially granny on her light blue suite nkosi yami bab'Mdluli where are you though halala and my

friends in their peach short poofy dresses [they chose them] were looking on point as my bridesmaids the only problem was the veil like covering my eyes when I walk down the aisle freaks me out but gogo said its tradition so yep I gotta. Gogo:"I'm so proud of you sis I'm sure your parents..." Me:"dont please I don't have parents gogo you are my parent and that's that so please" Tshepi:'you look beautiful Rori the chubby cheeks of the family" Me:"thanks sis even though you get on my nerves sometimes I still love you and I'd do anything for you except babysit your child" Tshepi:"borrow me this wedding dress" Me:'get a real guy who loves you and I'll even give it to you and all of its accessories" Gogo:"look at you getting along, is it because you'll be living apart now?" Us:"pretty much" Winter:"I like you guys more like this without all the racket" Me:"don't get used to the soft side of me please today is the last day of this emotional talk" Una:"already took a video as

remind of this softy " Me:"you better delete it if you know what's good for you" "Come the cars are here" The girls squeaked with excitement when they heard the cars are here, so here's how it'll go down I'm riding my car with Unathi,Kuli and Mkhulu in the front and the rest of the family in the other car in front of ours I can't believe I'm freaking out like this the drive there was just us singing along to moment for life by Nicky minaj i love this song so much that i decided that it be my entrance jam I'm different and my marriage is different so why not do things differently huh. At the wedding I fly with the stars ☆ in the sky I'm no longer trying to survive I believe that life is the price but to live doesn't mean you are alive Don't worry about me and who I fire I get what I desire its my empire and yes I call the shot I'm the empire I sprinkle holy water upon a vampire In this very moment I'm KING 👑 As soon as I heard those lyrics I knew that this was

it and cause everyone was so used to the slow old bridal song they were just dumbfounded when they saw me walking down the aisle with my smiley Mkhulu actually I just wanted to dance cause this song just gets me excited in more ways than one. When we got to the front Mkhulu did the hand off and then they stopped my jam cause I still had the veil in my face they couldn't see what's going on thank goodness Well as always the pastor started off with a prayer then the welcome speech. Pastor:"dearly beloved we are welcome here today to witness the joining of Lwazi Andrew Mkhize and Rorisho Mphahle in holy matrimony, if there is anyone here who believes that these two should not be married speak now or forever hold your piece" [Mumbling] Pastor:"if there is no one then..." "I do" We looked at the entrance and it was Leroy geez you idiot I looked at Lwazi who was just staring at Leroy with blood thirsty eyes I pinched his hand and

he looked at me I just shook my head.

Leroy:"actually I have two people here who feel the same way" Two elderly people walked in and then bam I know these people or I think so they look like my parents how could he do this to me knowing very well what they put me through. "That girl is a Ndlovu so I don't understand why she's being married as a Mphahlele who gave her off if I her father wasn't informed" he dares call himself my father I looked at the front row seat and my granny was crying nobody makes her cry I swear nobody I just pulled my hands away from Lwazi slowly walked down the stage busy staring at Leroy and now everyone was on their feet waiting to see my reaction I stood in front of Leroy and I found myself punching him I couldn't believe it and so did he. Me:"how dare you bring these people here Leroy? This is a low blow even for you they are not my parents understand me? My parents died when I was

only 5months old now you better listen to me I'm marrying Lwazi whether you and your friends like it and I'm doing it as a Mphahlele I don't know anything about a Ndlovu and I'm sure they don't know me nxa" I picked up my dress and walked to the front I mean if he came alone I'd understand but he brought up the people I buried long ago he has some nerve, Lwazi helped me get up the stage and he was angry that I could see. Me:"please continue" The pastor nod and just signaled for everyone to seat down. The ceremony went on smoothly but my mind was half there and half at what Lwazi will do to Leroy I don't even want to imagine from the look Lwazi had when he saw Leroy that just spelt anger at its best. Well time for the vows came on and luckily the groom goes first, he forced a smile and just let out this fake chuckle my God this guy is angry Him:"well she just punched a guy so that shows why I chose her,Rori is someone who speaks

her mind not caring to who and I know the effects of that believe me(chuckles) but she has made me realize that life ain't all work and no play sometimes you just have to let go and enjoy that moment, you are one in a trillion Rori and I don't know how I spotted you but I'm thankful that I did cause now I have one thing I can be proud of and that's you and your crazy stunts they make me laugh and sometimes make me want to choke you to death but all in all you still crazy and you never change for anyone you have your self respect and values and you stick by them no matter what and that makes you unique so please never change be the person I fell in love with from day one I love you Rorisho" [Applause] The pastor was just smiling and then he pointed at me okay weird right there Me:"woo how does one make a come back after that geez I forgot what I wanted to say" "From the heart" shouting Me:"well umh God give me strength... Lwazi I

don't know but our relationship is weird and it has been weird from day 1 but look at us now having a normal wedding with gatecrashers and stuff I never thought I'd be standing here saying all this stuff talking about emotions but I guess sometimes a person has to change and thanks to you my change came earlier than I had expected I used to be a fighter like a full on fist fight but now I'm not so being with you has really changed me and I wouldn't trade it for anything in this world so thank you Lwazi for turning me into a softy" Well after my vows everyone was clapping their hands some where even laughing but the person who was most proud was my granny and that's all I'm living for in this world making her happy and proud of me.

Pastor:"can I have the rings please" Well Senzo(L's friend) gave them to the pastor who just had a small prayer for them.

Pastor:"blessed are these rings as they will bind and hold your love together they will be a

symbol of your commitment towards each as husband and are we clear?" We simultaneously nod Pastor:"good now Lwazi take this ring and put it on her finger, the left hand and repeat after me" Lwazi took the ring and just picked up my left hand and just put the ring on the tip of my finger. Pastor:" I Lwazi Mkhize give you this ring as a symbol of my love and appreciation, I promise to love, respect and honor you in sickness and in health, in good days and bad days. For richer or for poorer till death do is part" Well Lwazi was saying everything the priest said till the final word and now it was my turn and I did the same thing and said the same thing till the end Pastor:"well I now pronounce you husband and wife you may kiss the bride" [Cheering] Black people calm down we are not having sex please, well he slowly lifted the veil with this mischievous smile on his face he leaned over and just smashed his lips against mine I responded and when the cheering got to

loud he broke the kiss and just hugged me.
him:"I will kill him" He pulled away and just
pecked my lips I was scared as they come I
mean he's talking about Leroy that I know for
sure,well what can I say I just forced a smile
and walked down with Lwazi as husband and
wife halala . •POSTED 01:12 AM•

My handsome monster-Our holy
matrimony . . . EPISODE 15 . . . RORI . . .
My feet were killing me like crazy and the fact
that I was doing this whole shot alone you'd
swear I was crazy walking around the mall in
my short,gray vest and white short sleeved
cardigan and some black airmax sneakers with
my afro in a clean bun my final dress fitting
actually it was the third one cause the first time
the dress was too big and second one it was
too tight as in tight I couldn't breath so I told
him to do it again and better this time I'm tired
and this side my friends didn't come with me
cause their dresses were ready they were just

waiting for tomorrow so that we can do our hair

I don't know what to do for real I mean braiding is just the norm of marriages and I seriously don't do normal so I think I'll just wash my hair dye it black I'm not risking it by color damage so yeah I'm always black I was done with the fittings and the dress fits me like a glove not big and not small too just fit for my body I love my dress big time it's just me without a doubt I went to buy myself some pie and a tropika juice when Lwazi called weird thing is I missed him I haven't seen in the past two weeks cause he was in and out of jozi so I answered. Me:" the owner of this phone is dead like ded dead so please leave your message" Him:"are you crazy? Is that how you answer your phone now?" Me:"its my phone I can answer anyway I want so what do you want?" him:"where are you?" Me:"the mall why?" Him:"what are you doing there?" Me:"Lwazi I'm starving here I mean I told you that I have my

final dress fitting" Him:"oh yeah that so how did it go? Fits you perfectly?" Me:'yeah its fine now I like it" Him:"that's great so when can I see you?" Me:" this Saturday you know you can't see me" Him:"I mean you you not you in that white dress even if it burnt holes through my pockets but I'm talking about you" Me:"geez Lwazi I'm tired" Him:"you have a driver Rori use him" Me:"fine I'll be there I hope I won't find any of your friends there" Him:"I'm alone and bored so come" Me:"fine I'm coming" Him:"okay love you" Me;"what did you say?" Him:"hurry up" He quickly hung up okay weird but I just walked to the car with the driver right behind me he opened the food for me while I was busy munching away on the pie I can't believe I'm about to see Lwazi while I have a freaking headache anyway the driver drove to the house in silence when we got there i was just wiping my hands I seriously smelt like lamb pie you could just eat me up anyway I threw everything

in the bin and just knocked I was told to come in so I did and I found the sir relaxed topless on his couch with a bowl of popcorn in front of him and a beer I closed the door and walked in I threw my bag on the other couch and just went to seat with him I pat his shoulder and slapped his head. Me:"couch potato" He slapped my thigh Him:"I'm relaxing after weeks of no rest" Me:"oh and what did you do? call me every two minutes to check if I was with a boy or not?" Him:"that's tough okay so how was your shopping?' Me:"I wasn't shopping Lwazi I didn't even buy myself new underwear" He just chocked. Me:" oh wow really sies on you man nxa" Him:" but I thought you don't wear underwear making it easy for me to take it.." Me:"eww" He burst out laughing Him:"you smell like lamb pie" Me:"I was eating one just a few moments ago wanna smell my hands?" Him;"no I don't" Me:'come on smell them here sniff sniff" Him:"haii man stop it" Me:"sniff it I know you

want to" Him:"I'll shove this down your throat"
Me:"lamb pie yum yum" Him:'eish why did I call
you here cause you are just giving me a
headache" Me:"Jesus is great feel the pain I'm
feeling" I took some popcorns and shoved them
down my throat and took his beer. Him:"yah neh
so how are the wedding arrangements going?"
Me;"they are done Lwazi the cake,venue and the
dresses the food like everything is sorted"
Him;"and you like everything?" Me:"yep it's on
point" Him:"that's great to know, so who will
walk you down the aisle?" Me:"my granddad like
my granny's younger brother" Him:"he's here?"
Me:'yeah he arrived this morning" Him:"thank
you" Me:"for?" Him:"doing this actually putting
your life on hold for all of this" Me:"like you gave
me a choice Lwazi" Him:"exactly so thank you"
Me:"okay now stop staring at me you are
creeping me out" Him:"are you leaving your hair
like this on Saturday?" Me:"is there a problem
with it" Him:"yeeses black person I didn't talk

about problems I said are you leaving it like this" Me:" no I'll dye it tomorrow" Him:"dye it pink" Me:"uh are you out of your mind? That's freaky and it might damage my hair" Him:"it's so soft" I slapped his hand away Me:"you'll ruin it we don't know where you were last night" Him:"i was at home with my friends watching TV and drinking talking about my bachelors tomorrow" Me:'who said you should tell me all of that? I didn't ask you know" Him:"just sharing since you seem bored and tired' Me:"tired is an understatement of the year" Him:"shame" Me:" did you even notice that I'm thinner now?" Him:"umh can I get you anything to drink" he is afraid of the weight topic and I just enjoy seeing him sweat trying to avoid it but hey I'll have to do with the little things. Me:"what are you looking at? You are seriously creeping me out" He cleared his throat and focused on the TV Me:"Lwazi what's with you?" Him:"nothing why?" Me:"the weird staring and

avoiding me what's going on?" Him:"it's nothing just got a lot of things on my mind" Me:"In that case I'd like that juice you offered please" Him:"I changed my mind you get it" Me:"mxm so much for hospitality" I stood up and walked to the kitchen I poured myself some juice from the looks of things he's planning on renovating his family house that's cool hey. Something is definitely off with Lwazi but what if he wants to call off the wedding can it be that please be that maybe my life can go back to normal and I'm saying maybe cause my whole life now is out there for everyone to see and judge like they know me, I felt hands just tightly wrap around my waist and he just sniffed my neck coming up to my cheek and he kissed it..

Me:"that's weird stop it" Him:"what's weird is this you being right here but seem so out of reach" Me:"cause I didn't come here to be in reach Lwazi I'm fine out of reach like this"

Him:"just a little bit in sight and on my reach"

Me:"you can't handle me" Him:"wanna bet?"
Me:"what's on the line?" Him:"if I lose I'll buy you anything you want" Me:"you already do that's nothing new" Him:"I'll give you one of my cars"
Me:" I can't drive Lwazi" Him:"geez what do you want from me?" Me:"nothing really just don't make bets you can't see through" Him:"I always fulfill my promises and you know that"
Me:"and now you are breaking a rule put in place by you remember? No sex or love"
him:"rules are meant to be broken every now and then" Me:"hehe you don't say.. Let's see" I turned around and just looked at him busy biting his lower lip. Me:"you are creepy today Lwazi" Him:"you smell like lamb pie what did you expect?" Me:"I'm not lamb pie Lwazi now let me pass" Him:"you so beautiful do you know that?" Me:"umh thank you " Him:"you have a beautiful smile" I shook my head Me:"ahh now... Now you are really forcing it guy please say what's on your mind" Him:"I have one thing on

my mind" Me:"what's that?" Him:"this..." He lifted my chin up with his index finger and just smashed his lips on to mine he didn't wait for me to respond he just picked me up and placed me on the kitchen table I swear I'm nothing when it comes to him picking me up but back to the kiss which he was just taking the lead and his hands were just exploring my body the way they wanted he pushed me up a bit I mean I'd be scared if this was the wood table but it's made from stone so I won't fall. I pushed him off and just caught my breath cause I couldn't breath. Me:"okay umh we have a rule about this remember" Him:"let's break the rules just this once" Me:"you got too much testerone running through your system" Him:"Rori we are getting married on Saturday" Me:"that's what you wanted right?" He nod Him:"but.." Me:"let's say save that testerone for Saturday night who knows I might be ready" Him:"the no sex before marriage stuff?" Me:"blame my granny and the

church not me" Him:"argh" He just placed his head on top of my vagina Him:"another slim escape my buddy". Me:"yeah that tickles" He kissed it too Me:"you are creeping me out Lwazi please move away from my vagina and no one will get hurt" Him:"just yet" Me:"okay I think I'll go home now before my granny calls... See you on Saturday" I kissed his cheek and just took my phone and walked out I got on the car and I was driven home where I found my family and friends just sitting around the TV since the house is fully renovated they'll be spending the week here. Una:"and where were you?" Me:'if you came with me you'd know" Gogo:"Rori what did you do?" Me:"what do you mean gogo?" Gogo:"did you sleep with him?" butterflies alert Me:"umh no I didn't eww granny I'd never" Kuli:"why are you so red?" Me:"mxm I didn't not sleep with Lwazi people please relax..." I quickly stood up and went to my room lord knows I felt guilty I didn't sleep with him but

yeah it got heated I took off my clothes and just wore more comfy ones and those are my pjs so yeah, I slept I got my beauty sleep before D-day fuck did I just promise Lwazi that I'd screw him

oh lord forgive me for I didn't know what I was saying. I woke up the next day and as always my Granny was beaming with excitement when all I need was a smoke so yeah I did my hygiene routine and went with the girls outside for a smoke we rolled about three joints each shared and after we went inside I mean we have a lot of things to do from our hair to nails and then full body massage my mother in law is paying so yeah I'll have fun with my buddies, we went to the mall and i did my hair wash and dye it black and just got it pulled really tight and then got a pony tail bun I really looked like a Chinese fidget we did our nails then it was massage time so relaxing hallelujah after we went to pick up my so beautiful dress and some alcohol then it was bacheloretts party

time believe me I couldn't smoke cause my mother in law was there but I sure had some wine lots and lots of them till I couldn't do it anymore so yeah I just went to bed busy wondering what's happening at the bachelors but hey I gotta focus on me myself and I right and my wedding in the morning I'm freaking out cause it seems like Lwazi wants more than we agreed on. my drunk glorious rest was disturbed by someone shaking me and when i opened my eyes i found Gogo Me:"what is it" Her:"wake up and let's pray" Me:"gogo I have a headache please" Her:"God will have to make way for you" Me:"oh my God help me now" Her:"yes now get up " She pulled the blanket away and just pulled me to the living room where everyone was already waiting for us we made a chain and just started praying and praying till ar couldn't anymore and then we said Amen. L's mom:"I'm going over to the boy's house dear so see you at the alter" Me:'okay ma

drive safely" L's mom:"and drink some coffee with headache pills okay it'll get rid of that sour look on your face" Me:"thank you ma I'll try that" She nod and just kissed my forehead L's mom:"welcome to my family" I nod with a smile on my face. She hugged everyone then left and I went to take a long and well deserved bath after I went to my bedroom just to find the make up artist already there so yeah I sat down in front of the mirror and put on some body lotion after she started doing her thing with my face making me look as fake as they come Jesus Christ come and rescue your child anyway this gay guy came into my room apparently he's the hair dresser and believe me my wedding dress designer was getting impatient for his turn like people stop fighting over me I'm not some piece of meat okay blah blah blah I got dressed in my wedding dress with its matching white heels and darlings I looked fabulous understand me I was like a different person all together and

I loved it like crazy the dress just did wonders to my body weight but for real I did lose some pounds stress related problems you don't want to know. My family looked amazing especially granny on her light blue suite nkosi yami bab'Mdluli where are you though halala and my friends in their peach short poofy dresses [they chose them] were looking on point as my bridesmaids the only problem was the veil like covering my eyes when I walk down the aisle freaks me out but gogo said its tradition so yep I gotta. Gogo:"I'm so proud of you sis I'm sure your parents..." Me:"dont please I don't have parents gogo you are my parent and that's that so please" Tshepi:'you look beautiful Rori the chubby cheeks of the family" Me:"thanks sis even though you get on my nerves sometimes I still love you and I'd do anything for you except babysit your child" Tshepi:"borrow me this wedding dress" Me:'get a real guy who loves you and I'll even give it to you and all of its

accessories" Gogo:"look at you getting along, is it because you'll be living apart now?" Us:"pretty much" Winter:"I like you guys more like this without all the racket" Me:"don't get used to the soft side of me please today is the last day of this emotional talk" Una:"already took a video as remind of this softy " Me:"you better delete it if you know what's good for you" "Come the cars are here" The girls squeaked with excitement when they heard the cars are here, so here's how it'll go down I'm riding my car with Unathi,Kuli and Mkhulu in the front and the rest of the family in the other car in front of ours I can't believe I'm freaking out like this the drive there was just us singing along to moment for life by Nicky minaj i love this song so much that i decided that it be my entrance jam I'm different and my marriage is different so why not do things differently huh. At the wedding I fly with the stars ☆ in the sky I'm no longer trying to survive I believe that life is the price

but to live doesn't mean you are alive Don't worry about me and who I fire I get what I desire its my empire and yes I call the shot I'm the empire I sprinkle holy water upon a vampire In this very moment I'm KING 👑 As soon as I heard those lyrics I knew that this was it and cause everyone was so used to the slow old bridal song they were just dumbfounded when they saw me walking down the aisle with my smiley Mkhulu actually I just wanted to dance cause this song just gets me excited in more ways than one. When we got to the front Mkhulu did the hand off and then they stopped my jam cause I still had the veil in my face they couldn't see what's going on thank goodness Well as always the pastor started off with a prayer then the welcome speech. Pastor:"dearly beloved we are welcome here today to witness the joining of Lwazi Andrew Mkhize and Rorisho Mphahle in holy matrimony, if there is anyone here who believes that these

two should not be married speak now or forever
hold your piece" [Mumbling] Pastor:"if there is
no one then..." "I do"

We looked at
the entrance and it was Leroy geez you idiot I
looked at Lwazi who was just staring at Leroy
with blood thirsty eyes I pinched his hand and
he looked at me I just shook my head.

Leroy:"actually I have two people here who feel
the same way" Two elderly people walked in
and then bam I know these people or I think so
they look like my parents how could he do this
to me knowing very well what they put me
through. "That girl is a Ndlovu so I don't
understand why she's being married as a
Mphahlele who gave her off if I her father
wasn't informed" he dares call himself my
father I looked at the front row seat and my
granny was crying nobody makes her cry I
swear nobody I just pulled my hands away from
Lwazi slowly walked down the stage busy
staring at Leroy and now everyone was on their

feet waiting to see my reaction I stood in front of Leroy and I found myself punching him I couldn't believe it and so did he. Me:"how dare you bring these people here Leroy? This is a low blow even for you they are not my parents understand me? My parents died when I was only 5months old now you better listen to me I'm marrying Lwazi whether you and your friends like it and I'm doing it as a Mphahlele I don't know anything about a Ndlovu and I'm sure they don't know me nxa" I picked up my dress and walked to the front I mean if he came alone I'd understand but he brought up the people I buried long ago he has some nerve, Lwazi helped me get up the stage and he was angry that I could see. Me:"please continue" The pastor nod and just signaled for everyone to seat down. The ceremony went on smoothly but my mind was half there and half at what Lwazi will do to Leroy I don't even want to imagine from the look Lwazi had when he saw

Leroy that just spelt anger at its best. Well time for the vows came on and luckily the groom goes first, he forced a smile and just let out this fake chuckle my God this guy is angry

Him:"well she just punched a guy so that shows why I chose her,Rori is someone who speaks her mind not caring to who and I know the effects of that believe me(chuckles) but she has made me realize that life ain't all work and no play sometimes you just have to let go and enjoy that moment, you are one in a trillion Rori and I don't know how I spotted you but I'm thankful that I did cause now I have one thing I can be proud of and that's you and your crazy stunts they make me laugh and sometimes make me want to choke you to death but all in all you still crazy and you never change for anyone you have your self respect and values and you stick by them no matter what and that makes you unique so please never change be the person I fell in love with from day one I love

you Rorisho" [Applause] The pastor was just smiling and then he pointed at me okay weird right there Me:"woo how does one make a come back after that geez I forgot what I wanted to say" "From the heart" shouting Me:"well umh God give me strength... Lwazi I don't know but our relationship is weird and it has been weird from day 1 but look at us now having a normal wedding with gatecrashers and stuff I never thought I'd be standing here saying all this stuff talking about emotions but I guess sometimes a person has to change and thanks to you my change came earlier than I had expected I used to be a fighter like a full on fist fight but now I'm not so being with you has really changed me and I wouldn't trade it for anything in this world so thank you Lwazi for turning me into a softy" Well after my vows everyone was clapping their hands some where even laughing but the person who was most proud was my granny and that's all I'm living for

in this world making her happy and proud of me.

Pastor:"can I have the rings please" Well

Senzo(L's friend) gave them to the pastor who just had a small prayer for them.

Pastor:"blessed are these rings as they will bind and hold your love together they will be a

symbol of your commitment towards each as husband and are we clear?" We simultaneously

nod Pastor:"good now Lwazi take this ring and

put it on her finger, the left hand and repeat

after me" Lwazi took the ring and just picked up

my left hand and just put the ring on the tip of

my finger. Pastor:" I Lwazi Mkhize give you this

ring as a symbol of my love and appreciation, I

promise to love,respect and honor you in

sickness and in health, in good days and bad

days. For richer or for poorer till death do is

part" Well Lwazi was saying everything the

priest said till the final word and now it was my

turn and I did the same thing and said the same

thing till the end Pastor:"well I now pronounce

you husband and wife you may kiss the bride"
[Cheering] Black people calm down we are not having sex please, well he slowly lifted the veil with this mischievous smile on his face he leaned over and just smashed his lips against mine I responded and when the cheering got to loud he broke the kiss and just hugged me. him:"I will kill him" He pulled away and just pecked my lips I was scared as they come I mean he's talking about Leroy that I know for sure,well what can I say I just forced a smile and walked down with Lwazi as husband and wife halala . •POSTED 01:12 AM•

[03/08, 16:03] Mk: 🍷 My handsome monster -Our holy matrimony ... EPISODE 16 ...

RORI As soon as we stepped outside to take our pictures Lwazi didn't change at all he was still staring at Leroy I don't even understand why that guy is still here with his friends and they were busy smiling I just wanted to punch their teeth out after the picture taking

we went to the reception area I had taken veil off so I just had my hair showing we sat at the front and then those two idiots went to seat with her haven't they put her through enough though I was just looking at her waiting for any signs of discomfort. Lwazi:"go get her she'll seat here" I looked at him Him:'go fetch her" Me:"she's fine" Him:"but you are not" Me:"I'll be fine as long as they don't do anything stupid" Him:"like?" Me:"make her angry or even cry" Him:"just go fetch her" Me:"fine" I stood up and walked down to their table I pat gogo's shoulder. Me:'are you okay?" Gogo:"yes dear" Me:"well Lwazi says you can come and seat with us it'll give me a great peace of mind" Gogo:"you don't have to" Me:"please gogo... Just come they have put a chair for you there" Gogo:"I'm still talking with your parents" Me:"I don't have anything as such gogo we spoke about this my parents died years ago I don't know these people so please come" "How dare you talk

about us like we are not here? We are your parents" Me:"come gogo please" . I helped her stand up and just took her bag this woman dares talk to me ehh, I was pulled back I looked at the person holding me and just looked at our hands. Me:"sir don't touch me, don't hold this dress even you can't afford it so please remove your hands before I get the guards to throw you out" Gogo:"Rori please" Woman:"you even changed your name from Palesa to Rorisho" I smiled a bit Me:"I hate the people who gave me that name so I changed it and I love my new name it has a meaning a real meaning as I said leave me alone before I get you thrown out" Man:"you are my daughter" Ever caused a scene at your own wedding well I did I just choked him. Me:"say that one more time and you'll rue the day you ever came back here understand me? I said you are not my parents so forget it" My grandmother just pulled me away luckily we weren't shouting so most of the people didn't

see anything I just forced a smile and held my grandmother's hand we walked to the bridal table and she sat down next to me people were giving their speeches then he just had to ruin my wedding I so hate Leroy for bringing them here I hate him when my so called father took the mic I felt like I should have been drunk and high for this maybe I wouldn't feel the pain.

Him:"good afternoon ladies and gentleman my name is Albert Ndlovu the father to Palesa ..I mean Rorisho and I'm really proud of her as a parent she has made me proud as her father even though she is using the Mphahlele surname when she's actually a Ndlovu but..."

Me:"shut up" I shouted Everyone just looked at me and I don't know why but I was crying.

Me:"just stop lying please stop lying... You are not my father and she's not my mother

understand me?" Gogo:"Rorisho please seat

down" Me:"no gogo I'm tired today is supposed to be my day not theirs but they are ruining

everything like they ruined my life all those years back I don't want them I don't care about them too cause I don't have parents okay so please sir don't you ever use my name in your sentence cause if I hear even an R forming on your lips I'll beat you up myself and don't think I won't cause you are older I'll hurt you big time today is my day mine understand? I didn't search for you all those years as you didn't come back for me showing I don't care so please step down and shut up or leave"

Everyone gasped when I was boiling this side I was furious, Lwazi tucked on my hand and I just pulled it away. Me:'don't okay he's not my father so he doesn't deserve my respect understand?" He just signalled something to his guards and soon they were man handling him off the stage along with his wife I just walked out using the rear entrance my day is ruined big time my life is ruined too. "Come back they are gone" I looked at Lwazi leaning against the wall arms

folded and not I just looked away, he walked towards me and just stood in front of me.

Him:"why do you hate them so much?" Me:"hate who?" Him:"your parents" Me:"for crying out

loud my parents are dead" Him:"okay I mean those people in there why do you hate them?"

Me:"they denied me a chance at a normal childhood Lwazi I didn't have the perks of hearing my own mother's voice you know how that hurt? People in school thought I was weird and on mother's day kids were writing letters to their mother's telling them how much they loved them but I just wrote one for my granny even on father's day I'd write about gogo for a whole 18 years and now they come back telling me I even changed my name?How is that normal?"

Him:"you changed your name!" Me:"yeah my first name was Palesa Ndlovu but when I turned 16 I changed it to Rorisho Mphahlele" Him:"I'm sorry hey" Me:"I mean I stopped asking about them when I was 7 I just got tired of hearing

they are coming, they are busy at work, they'll call tomorrow. Tomorrow was tomorrow and tomorrow became my grandmother's biggest lie tomorrow my princess they'll call, they'll bring you some sweets tomorrow. Tomorrow and tomorrow Lwazi tomorrow was tomorrow even when my grandfather died it was still tomorrow and I got tired of tomorrow" I sobbed

Me:"Tomorrow Palesa I promise they'll be here you know I'd wake up before anyone at home and go outside to wait for them since it was tomorrow and guess what they never came then Tomorrow became tomorrow again till I went crazy with hearing tomorrow and you know what on my 7th birthday I dug a small grave behind the house and took their picture and put it inside a box and buried it I buried them at seven I buried them, they are supposed to be dead like their tomorrows but Leroy brought them here how could he? I thought he cared they ruined my day " He just

wrapped his arms around me and just squeezed me wait did I just mention Leroy in one sentence with the pain my feeling? Oh shit I just pushed him off and wiped my tears away. Me:"please don't hurt Leroy please " He just shrug and kissed my forehead,he wiped my tears with his thumbs. Him:"you'll get a headache stop crying" I nod Him:"let's go back inside and we'll have that huge chocolate cake you've been crying about we'll leave straight after that" Me:"Lwazi please" Him:"what?" Me:"don't hurt the guy please he's an idiot but don't kill him" Him:"I'll chop him up" I gave him a raised eyebrow. Him:"I'm joking so please come give me your hand your tiny man slayer hand"_ I faked a laugh and just reached out to him. Him:"and you look beautiful in that dress just hugs you up so perfectly" Me:"eww stop drooling it's not sexy" He kissed my cheek wrapping his hand around my waist and we walked in all smiley and stuff we sat down and I

just drank my juice while Lwazi drinks champagne so I just swapped glasses.

Lwazi:"give it back" I shook my head Me:"you have to be sober when you drive" He just leaned over and just whispered. Him:"it'll make you have wet dreams" I just punched his thigh and that made him chuckle nkosi yami now its cake time and Lwazi just saw how excited i was and when we cut the cake I cut a small piece and just fed it to him and he cut me a piece too he fed me busy laughing. Him:'don't eat my hand please" The cake tasted so good I just closed my eyes as I savored the moment Lwazi just pecked my lips like come on I'm eating here I just cut a huge slice for my granny meaning I'll eat with her, and now it was free for all I went back to the table and just sat down.

Me:"let's have some cake gogo" Gogo:"you know I don't eat such" Just what I wanted to hear I just took the fork and just enjoyed the cake with Lwazi busy mingling with

our guests I'm not doing such geez when I have cake in front of me I'd rather not. Una:"are you okay?" I nod Me:"I'm fine" Una:"so what Leroy did how did you take that?" I shrug Me:"he opened and old wound and also put salt in it so I don't know" Kuli;"I'm so sorry friend but maybe he was trying to save your friendship" Me:"now I have to save his life"_ Una:"what?" Me:"nah forget it tell me please that you love the cake" Una:" you'll get fat you know" Me:"I don't care this is the bomb right here" Kuli:"its yummy and it has a hit of korobela in it" Una:"and where have you tasted korobela" Me:"yeah where have you?" She shrug Me:"you have a secret I tell you" Kuli:"unlike you and hubby over there look at how he's looking at you" Me:"how is he looking at me? Guys his eyes are just big" Una:"no your eyes are big but his are just staring at you" Kuli:"he's drooling" Me:"hallelujah I'll just keep quiet and enjoy my cake yummy" Una:"look whose coming" Me:"stop checking

out Lwazi please it's creepy" Una:"he's just too
yummy to avoid" Me:"and his yumminess is off
limits remember? I'm his wife Mrs Yummy"
Kuli:"listen to that wow now you are already
claiming him" "Whose claiming who?"
Kuli:"well..." Me:"no one Lwazi go back to your
friends" Lwazi:"it's time for us to go now"
Me:"go where?" Lwazi:"honeymoon retreat"
Me:"I thought you said..." Lwazi:"it's private say
your goodbyes and let's bounce wifey" I just
wiped my hands and stood up I hugged the girls
I went to my granny and just hugged her.
Me:"see you soon I promise" Gogo:"take care of
yourself okay? Be that good girl I raised" Me:"I
will I promise and tell me if those two bother
you I'll deal with them" She nod I kissed her
forehead. Me:"I love you gogo and no will ever
take your place okay" She just nod Gogo:"and I
love you too" I went to my sisters and we
hugged them. Me:"you better look after her or I'll
hurt you all all one by one" Winter:" don't even

try it you are now someone's wife" Me:"that doesn't change anything, she's still my granny so behave" They squashed me with a hug, and after I went to say goodbye to Lwazi's family I mean the gifts we got from his family is just over load but he has a big family and they are all nice unlike him and Mpho geez that woman freaks me out till today. After our goodbyes we walked out with the guards bringing the gifts. We got into the car and we drove away with the guards right behind us. Him:"you ready to move in" Me:"I haven't packed though Lwazi" Him:"haii man I told you to pack last night Rori" Me:"I didn't get the chance to I mean with the male strippers and the champagne I ..*" Him:"male what?" Me:"strippers" Him:"I see" He focused on the road Mr tough guy Me:"I'm joking I packed and my bags are in the car" He looked at me with the side eye I just rubbed his cheek. Me:"there were no strippers I'm just joking I mean I couldn't even smoke with your mom

there hau" I saw him smile a little bit talk about being an idiot I just slapped the back of his head Me:"you were busy touching strippers at your party last night" Him:"says who?" Me:"your energy says it all" Him:"it's too much testosterone"

Me:"I see " The dreaded testosterone talk why did I teach him that though why na. Well we stopped outside the new house. He got out and came to open the door for me I took off my seatbelt and he carried me off and me being me I was busy laughing my ass off. Me:"let's start again" Him:"no ways geez you had way too much sugar" Me:"haa Lwazi just one slice" He nod and just put me down I turned around and looked at him. Me:"and the stairs? Who is going to carry me there?" Him:"God gave you two legs as in two legs" Me:"you are romantic do you know that?" I just took off my heels Me:"unzip the dress my dear husband" Him:"with pleasure my dear wife" Me:"just unzip the dress nothing more Lwazi don't get any ideas" Him:"I won't

now turn" I was having doubt's but I just turned around and he unzipped the dress slowly as he can with his fingers connecting with my skin
Me:"ain't you done yet?" Him:"its a long zipper Rori" Me:"you are too slow hurry up please"
Him:"you know traditionally we should be doing this in the bedroom" I choked up and just started coughing Him:"what's wrong?"
Me:"nothing umh thank you I'll do the rest myself" Him:"okay then have fun" I grinned and picked up my shoes and held on to my dress I won't be able to take it off I'm afraid I'll tear it and I love it to the point where I don't want to take it off I got in to the bedroom and tried to take it off but I couldn't. Me:"Lwazi... I need your help" I shouted. Him:"I'm on my way" I heard him whistling hallelujah what's going on with him and when he got to the bedroom he was busy opening up his gum. Him:"what do you want?" Me:"can you pull this side please but gently" Him:"okay" He helped me take it off and

I wasn't wearing a bra so I just covered my boobs with my hand. Me:"umh you can go now like fetch the bags" Him:"the guards are bringing them so need help with anything else?*" Me:"umh no I'm good" Him:"you sure?" Me:"jeez Lwazi I'm sure please stop staring" Him:"you just turned red" Me:"no I haven't are crazy please get out of my room" Him:"can I kiss you?" Me:"when I'm dressed and ready to go" Him:"I want to kiss you now" Me:"I think I hear your guards calling" Him:"they never call me" He just pulled me closer to him taking my hands off my boobs and wrapping them around his neck and smashed his lips against mine he was busy moving his hands up and down my back I pushed him off. Me:"a rule remember?" Him:"forget about the rules and what not, let's say they don't exist" Me:"but you put them there" Him:"and I'm taking them off" Me:"wait...umh can I ask you something?" Him:"ask" He started kissing my neck. Me:"can

you...can you promise me that you won't hurt Leroy please" He lifted his head and just pecked my lips. Him:"what's with you and that boy?" Me:"nothing just that his family and mine are friends and I don't want to even think about mourning him he's my best friend" Him:"is that all?" I nod biting my lower lip busy staring at him. Him:"I really don't like betrayal Rori I don't react nicely to it" Me:"I won't do that Lwazi just... Just don't hurt him" He just cupped my boobs and just squeezed them. Him:"what's in it for me huh? Why should I do as you say? Why shouldn't I kill him for actually making you cry and causing a scene at my wedding? People who do that to me end up dead" Me:"do it for me then... Don't mmh don't hurt him" Him:"what's wrong?" I shook my head. Him:"okay so what do I get in all of this? What's in it for Lwazi Mkhize?" Me:"what does he want?" Him:"you... He wants you how about that?" He was slowly pushing me to the bed he

was kissing my neck the whole time. Him:"so? Do I get what I want?" Me:"you already have it Lwazi just leave him alone" He chuckled with his lips right above mine. Him:"he's one lucky boy though but I still think I should have a man to man with him you know" Me:'leave him please" Him:"we'll see you look my prettier without your dress" He kissed my tummy and just pulled on my belly ring with his tongue Me:"that hurts Lwazi" He kissed my belly button and just left a trail of kisses coming up on me he started sucking on my left breast my boobs are virgins too so imagine how they felt my nipples were hard and feeling his tongue play with them like that just kills me. He gave both of them attention rubbing and sucking on them till he was satisfied that he had made my nipples hard and wet he began kissing my neck and then my cheek. Him:"relax a bit okay or nunus your world will seem upside down" Me:"thank you for that" He smiled and just kissed me I

responded to him as he opened up my legs and got in between them my heart was beating out of my chest the entire time, he pulled away from the kiss. Him:"Rori please relax come on I'll hurt you" Me:"hello earth to Lwazi I'm not used to having a bulky man on top of me remember? So excuse me for being scared" Him:"do you trust me?" I shook my head Him:"then hold my hand okay? Pinch me I don't care" I nod and he just took off his jacket followed by his shirt I looked at him Him:"you can have this you know?" Me:"have what? " Him:"this.." He attacked my lips with a kiss I responded and yeah he held my hand his lips are so big,wet,smooth and juicy he moved his hand down my stomach to my undies but fear kicked in and I caught his hand he pulled away from the kiss. Him:"what's wrong?" Me:"don't" Him:"I won't hurt you I just want to feel something" Me:"what?" Him:'you won't understand so you relax, il won't hurt you I

promise" He pecked my lower lip Him:"I
promise" I slowly let go of his hand and he
continued kissing me and his hand going down
on me he pushed it down my undies and just
started rubbing me I gasped in between the kiss,
he gave my hand a tight grip and just tried
pushing his thumb in me and it hurt I pushed
him off with tears threatening to flow he said he
won't hurt me but shit hit the fan. Him:"shit I'm
sorry.... I'm sorry okay" He began kissing me all
over my face. Him:"I'm sorry" I nod but still the
shit hit the fan and there ain't no turning back.
Him:"I didn't mean to Rori" I just held on his face
Me:" I said it's okay" Him:"you are crying though"
Me;"I can't stop them back" He smiled a bit and
just unhooked his belt and just took off his
trousers oh Holy Mary mother of Jesus have
mercy on my pussy he's rock solid he pushed
my legs further apart and just attacked my lips
with a kiss and just having him on top of me
feeling how hard it is on my vagina just creeps

me up he pulled away from the kiss pulling my lower lip he moved his hands down and tried to pull of my underwear so I just lifted my weight up and he pulled it off. Him:"where did you learn that?" I shrug He soon got in between my legs and just sucked on me my legs just started shivering I gasped and held on his head as he went deeper and deeper with his tongue and when I was starting to get extra excited he stopped and just pulled me down a bit.

Him:"Mrs Mkhize you'll chew your lip off" I slapped his chest and he smiled, he slowly took off his shorts Holy Molly brother of all things I almost screamed but I just covered my mouth. He just parted my legs and just held on to my left hand with our rings touching,pulling on my lower lip with the other one he kissed me and tried to penetrate me I just pulled my hand from his and just sunk my nails into his back he continued trying to push himself in and then the hymen broke it felt like my entire world just

crumbled down fuck this shit hurts so bad he began taking slow thrusts going deeper with every thrust, he pulled away from the kiss which I didn't want to, his movement was slow and steady as he picked up my leg and just did his thing with ms moaning out his name. Him:"are you okay?" Me:"mmh" Him:"relax or you'll skin me alive" I was wanted to laugh but seeing him all sweaty on top of me and the stuff going on in between my legs I just couldn't I relaxed my hands and held on to him instead of sinking my nails into his skin just when things seemed to be grey a sense of pleasure kicked in as little as it was it felt so good. Me:"Lwazi please" I moaned Him:"please what?" I quickly shook my head Him:"you okay though?" Me:"mmh" Hr just pecked my lips and just had his fun with me not forgetting to be gentle Him:"fuck.. Are you okay?" He kissed my cheek as he laid down besides me Me:"yeah so why are you swearing?" Him:"cause I want to.. Come let's go

take a shower" Me:"go take one in your room"
Him:"my God just come..." He got of the bed
and just picked me up and led me to the
bathroom he got into the shower with me and
we took a simple innocent shower no funny
business but I got out first, I went to put on
some body lotion he came out while I was
putting on my body lotion. His phone rang and
he quickly attended it from the sounds of things
he wasn't happy at all he threatened the caller
than hung up. Him:"umh I have to leave and
from the looks of things for the entire week or
more" Me:"oh troubles at work?" Him:"yeah
there's something urgent I have to take care off"
Me:"cool with me" Him:"you sure?" Me:"yeah go
I'll be fine" Him:"okay and no parties" Me:"don't
even try it" He just kissed my cheek and walked
out. Me:"rules are back on" Him:"yeah when I'm
away like this" Me:"even when you are back
Lwazi so please do you" Him:"oh if you say so
see you when I get back" I nod and just put on

my hand cream, he actually slammed my door
okay weird why is he so attached like a gum on
paper. I went to my bags and just took out my
fluffy pink PJs and my slippers I walked out of
the room downstairs to the living room I
switched on the TV I put on the music channel
I'm not scared cause I know the house is
guarded 24/7 so yeah. [phone rings] . Leroy
Me:"what do you want?" Him:"to apologies Rori"
Me:"screw you Leroy what you did didn't only
hurt me but my entire family so please don't call
me I'll call you" I hung up nxa he has some
nerve calling me with his lame apology. I dialed
Unathi's number and she answered all cheery.
Me:"friend I need your help" her:"with?" Me:"I
need you to come over the house with Kuli for a
sleep over but first buy me some morning after
pill" She screamed in my ears Me:"geez what's
with you?" Her:"he sliced the cake? Chocolate
cake turned into vanilla cream" Me:"mxm will
you come or what?" Her:"where is the husband"

Me:" he went out to make us some money so get ready I'll tell the driver to come and fetch you guys" Her:"okay we'll go and pack right now and I want my money for the pills" Me:"I'll give the driver some money you just have to purchase it" Her:"okay see you" Me:'bring some weed too and clothes for two weeks" Her:"okay we are on our way babe see you" I hung up and just relaxed on the couch waiting for my besties to come then the real party begins when cat is away the rats come out to play and since Lwazi is gone I'll be fine I'll have fun. . THE END

☺ My handsome monster-Our holy matrimony . . . EPISODE 16 . . . RORI
As soon as we stepped outside to take our pictures Lwazi didn't change at all he was still staring at Leroy I don't even understand why that guy is still here with his friends and they were busy smiling I just wanted to punch their teeth out after the picture taking we went to the

reception area I had taken veil off so I just had my hair showing we sat at the front and then those two idiots went to seat with her haven't they put her through enough though I was just looking at her waiting for any signs of discomfort. Lwazi:"go get her she'll seat here" I looked at him Him:'go fetch her" Me:"she's fine" Him:"but you are not" Me:"I'll be fine as long as they don't do anything stupid" Him:"like?" Me:"make her angry or even cry" Him:"just go fetch her" Me:"fine" I stood up and walked down to their table I pat gogo's shoulder. Me:'are you okay?" Gogo:"yes dear" Me:"well Lwazi says you can come and seat with us it'll give me a great peace of mind" Gogo:"you don't have to" Me:"please gogo... Just come they have put a chair for you there" Gogo:"I'm still talking with your parents" Me:"I don't have anything as such gogo we spoke about this my parents died years ago I don't know these people so please come" "How dare you talk about us like we are

not here? We are your parents" Me:"come gogo please" . I helped her stand up and just took her bag this woman dares talk to me ehh, I was pulled back I looked at the person holding me and just looked at our hands. Me:"sir don't touch me, don't hold this dress even you can't afford it so please remove your hands before I get the guards to throw you out" Gogo:"Rori please" Woman:"you even changed your name from Palesa to Rorisho" I smiled a bit Me:"I hate the people who gave me that name so I changed it and I love my new name it has a meaning a real meaning as I said leave me alone before I get you thrown out" Man:"you are my daughter" Ever caused a scene at your own wedding well I did I just choked him. Me:"say that one more time and you'll rue the day you ever came back here understand me? I said you are not my parents so forget it" My grandmother just pulled me away luckily we weren't shouting so most of the people didn't

see anything I just forced a smile and held my grandmother's hand we walked to the bridal table and she sat down next to me people were giving their speeches then he just had to ruin my wedding I so hate Leroy for bringing them here I hate him when my so called father took the mic I felt like I should have been drunk and high for this maybe I wouldn't feel the pain.

Him:"good afternoon ladies and gentleman my name is Albert Ndlovu the father to Palesa ..I mean Rorisho and I'm really proud of her as a parent she has made me proud as her father even though she is using the Mphahlele surname when she's actually a Ndlovu but..."

Me:"shut up" I shouted Everyone just looked at me and I don't know why but I was crying.

Me:"just stop lying please stop lying... You are not my father and she's not my mother

understand me?" Gogo:"Rorisho please seat

down" Me:"no gogo I'm tired today is supposed to be my day not theirs but they are ruining

everything like they ruined my life all those years back I don't want them I don't care about them too cause I don't have parents okay so please sir don't you ever use my name in your sentence cause if I hear even an R forming on your lips I'll beat you up myself and don't think I won't cause you are older I'll hurt you big time today is my day mine understand? I didn't search for you all those years as you didn't come back for me showing I don't care so please step down and shut up or leave"

Everyone gasped when I was boiling this side I was furious, Lwazi tucked on my hand and I just pulled it away. Me:'don't okay he's not my father so he doesn't deserve my respect understand?" He just signalled something to his guards and soon they were man handling him off the stage along with his wife I just walked out using the rear entrance my day is ruined big time my life is ruined too. "Come back they are gone" I looked at Lwazi leaning against the wall arms

folded and not I just looked away, he walked towards me and just stood in front of me.

Him:"why do you hate them so much?" Me:"hate who?" Him:"your parents" Me:"for crying out

loud my parents are dead" Him:"okay I mean those people in there why do you hate them?"

Me:"they denied me a chance at a normal childhood Lwazi I didn't have the perks of hearing my own mother's voice you know how that hurt? People in school thought I was weird and on mother's day kids were writing letters to their mother's telling them how much they loved them but I just wrote one for my granny even on father's day I'd write about gogo for a whole 18 years and now they come back telling me I even changed my name?How is that normal?"

Him:"you changed your name!" Me:"yeah my first name was Palesa Ndlovu but when I turned 16 I changed it to Rorisho Mphahlele" Him:"I'm sorry hey" Me:"I mean I stopped asking about them when I was 7 I just got tired of hearing

they are coming, they are busy at work, they'll call tomorrow. Tomorrow was tomorrow and tomorrow became my grandmother's biggest lie tomorrow my princess they'll call, they'll bring you some sweets tomorrow. Tomorrow and tomorrow Lwazi tomorrow was tomorrow even when my grandfather died it was still tomorrow and I got tired of tomorrow" I sobbed

Me:"Tomorrow Palesa I promise they'll be here you know I'd wake up before anyone at home and go outside to wait for them since it was tomorrow and guess what they never came then Tomorrow became tomorrow again till I went crazy with hearing tomorrow and you know what on my 7th birthday I dug a small grave behind the house and took their picture and put it inside a box and buried it I buried them at seven I buried them, they are supposed to be dead like their tomorrows but Leroy brought them here how could he? I thought he cared they ruined my day " He just

wrapped his arms around me and just squeezed me wait did I just mention Leroy in one sentence with the pain my feeling? Oh shit I just pushed him off and wiped my tears away. Me:"please don't hurt Leroy please " He just shrug and kissed my forehead,he wiped my tears with his thumbs. Him:"you'll get a headache stop crying" I nod Him:"let's go back inside and we'll have that huge chocolate cake you've been crying about we'll leave straight after that" Me:"Lwazi please" Him:"what?" Me:"don't hurt the guy please he's an idiot but don't kill him" Him:"I'll chop him up" I gave him a raised eyebrow. Him:"I'm joking so please come give me your hand your tiny man slayer hand"_ I faked a laugh and just reached out to him. Him:"and you look beautiful in that dress just hugs you up so perfectly" Me:"eww stop drooling it's not sexy" He kissed my cheek wrapping his hand around my waist and we walked in all smiley and stuff we sat down and I

just drank my juice while Lwazi drinks champagne so I just swapped glasses.

Lwazi:"give it back" I shook my head Me:"you have to be sober when you drive" He just leaned over and just whispered. Him:"it'll make you have wet dreams" I just punched his thigh and that made him chuckle nkosi yami now its cake time and Lwazi just saw how excited i was and when we cut the cake I cut a small piece and just fed it to him and he cut me a piece too he fed me busy laughing. Him:'don't eat my hand please" The cake tasted so good I just closed my eyes as I savored the moment Lwazi just pecked my lips like come on I'm eating here I just cut a huge slice for my granny meaning I'll eat with her, and now it was free for all I went back to the table and just sat down.

Me:"let's have some cake gogo" Gogo:"you know I don't eat such" Just what I wanted to hear I just took the fork and just enjoyed the cake with Lwazi busy mingling with

our guests I'm not doing such geez when I have cake in front of me I'd rather not. Una:"are you okay?" I nod Me:"I'm fine" Una:"so what Leroy did how did you take that?" I shrug Me:"he opened and old wound and also put salt in it so I don't know" Kuli;"I'm so sorry friend but maybe he was trying to save your friendship" Me:"now I have to save his life"_ Una:"what?" Me:"nah forget it tell me please that you love the cake" Una:" you'll get fat you know" Me:"I don't care this is the bomb right here" Kuli:"its yummy and it has a hit of korobela in it" Una:"and where have you tasted korobela" Me:"yeah where have you?" She shrug Me:"you have a secret I tell you" Kuli:"unlike you and hubby over there look at how he's looking at you" Me:"how is he looking at me? Guys his eyes are just big" Una:"no your eyes are big but his are just staring at you" Kuli:"he's drooling" Me:"hallelujah I'll just keep quiet and enjoy my cake yummy" Una:"look whose coming" Me:"stop checking

out Lwazi please it's creepy" Una:"he's just too
yummy to avoid" Me:"and his yumminess is off
limits remember? I'm his wife Mrs Yummy"
Kuli:"listen to that wow now you are already
claiming him" "Whose claiming who?"
Kuli:"well..." Me:"no one Lwazi go back to your
friends" Lwazi:"it's time for us to go now"
Me:"go where?" Lwazi:"honeymoon retreat"
Me:"I thought you said..." Lwazi:"it's private say
your goodbyes and let's bounce wifey" I just
wiped my hands and stood up I hugged the girls
I went to my granny and just hugged her.
Me:"see you soon I promise" Gogo:"take care of
yourself okay? Be that good girl I raised" Me:"I
will I promise and tell me if those two bother
you I'll deal with them" She nod I kissed her
forehead. Me:"I love you gogo and no will ever
take your place okay" She just nod Gogo:"and I
love you too" I went to my sisters and we
hugged them. Me:"you better look after her or I'll
hurt you all all one by one" Winter:" don't even

try it you are now someone's wife" Me:"that doesn't change anything, she's still my granny so behave" They squashed me with a hug, and after I went to say goodbye to Lwazi's family I mean the gifts we got from his family is just over load but he has a big family and they are all nice unlike him and Mpho geez that woman freaks me out till today. After our goodbyes we walked out with the guards bringing the gifts. We got into the car and we drove away with the guards right behind us. Him:"you ready to move in" Me:"I haven't packed though Lwazi" Him:"haii man I told you to pack last night Rori" Me:"I didn't get the chance to I mean with the male strippers and the champagne I ..*" Him:"male what?" Me:"strippers" Him:"I see" He focused on the road Mr tough guy Me:"I'm joking I packed and my bags are in the car" He looked at me with the side eye I just rubbed his cheek. Me:"there were no strippers I'm just joking I mean I couldn't even smoke with your mom

there hau" I saw him smile a little bit talk about being an idiot I just slapped the back of his head Me:"you were busy touching strippers at your party last night" Him:"says who?" Me:"your energy says it all" Him:"it's too much testosterone"

Me:"I see " The dreaded testosterone talk why did I teach him that though why na. Well we stopped outside the new house. He got out and came to open the door for me I took off my seatbelt and he carried me off and me being me I was busy laughing my ass off. Me:"let's start again" Him:"no ways geez you had way too much sugar" Me:"haa Lwazi just one slice" He nod and just put me down I turned around and looked at him. Me:"and the stairs? Who is going to carry me there?" Him:"God gave you two legs as in two legs" Me:"you are romantic do you know that?" I just took off my heels Me:"unzip the dress my dear husband" Him:"with pleasure my dear wife" Me:"just unzip the dress nothing more Lwazi don't get any ideas" Him:"I won't

now turn" I was having doubt's but I just turned around and he unzipped the dress slowly as he can with his fingers connecting with my skin
Me:"ain't you done yet?" Him:"its a long zipper Rori"
Me:"you are too slow hurry up please"
Him:"you know traditionally we should be doing this in the bedroom" I choked up and just started coughing Him:"what's wrong?"
Me:"nothing umh thank you I'll do the rest myself" Him:"okay then have fun" I grinned and picked up my shoes and held on to my dress I won't be able to take it off I'm afraid I'll tear it and I love it to the point where I don't want to take it off I got in to the bedroom and tried to take it off but I couldn't. Me:"Lwazi... I need your help" I shouted. Him:"I'm on my way" I heard him whistling hallelujah what's going on with him and when he got to the bedroom he was busy opening up his gum. Him:"what do you want?" Me:"can you pull this side please but gently" Him:"okay" He helped me take it off and

I wasn't wearing a bra so I just covered my boobs with my hand. Me:"umh you can go now like fetch the bags" Him:"the guards are bringing them so need help with anything else?*" Me:"umh no I'm good" Him:"you sure?" Me:"jeez Lwazi I'm sure please stop staring" Him:"you just turned red" Me:"no I haven't are crazy please get out of my room" Him:"can I kiss you?" Me:"when I'm dressed and ready to go" Him:"I want to kiss you now" Me:"I think I hear your guards calling" Him:"they never call me" He just pulled me closer to him taking my hands off my boobs and wrapping them around his neck and smashed his lips against mine he was busy moving his hands up and down my back I pushed him off. Me:"a rule remember?" Him:"forget about the rules and what not, let's say they don't exist" Me:"but you put them there" Him:"and I'm taking them off" Me:"wait...umh can I ask you something?" Him:"ask" He started kissing my neck. Me:"can

you...can you promise me that you won't hurt Leroy please" He lifted his head and just pecked my lips. Him:"what's with you and that boy?" Me:"nothing just that his family and mine are friends and I don't want to even think about mourning him he's my best friend" Him:"is that all?" I nod biting my lower lip busy staring at him. Him:"I really don't like betrayal Rori I don't react nicely to it" Me:"I won't do that Lwazi just... Just don't hurt him" He just cupped my boobs and just squeezed them. Him:"what's in it for me huh? Why should I do as you say? Why shouldn't I kill him for actually making you cry and causing a scene at my wedding? People who do that to me end up dead" Me:"do it for me then... Don't mmh don't hurt him" Him:"what's wrong?" I shook my head. Him:"okay so what do I get in all of this? What's in it for Lwazi Mkhize?" Me:"what does he want?" Him:"you... He wants you how about that?" He was slowly pushing me to the bed he

was kissing my neck the whole time. Him:"so? Do I get what I want?" Me:"you already have it Lwazi just leave him alone" He chuckled with his lips right above mine. Him:"he's one lucky boy though but I still think I should have a man to man with him you know" Me:'leave him please" Him:"we'll see you look my prettier without your dress" He kissed my tummy and just pulled on my belly ring with his tongue Me:"that hurts Lwazi" He kissed my belly button and just left a trail of kisses coming up on me he started sucking on my left breast my boobs are virgins too so imagine how they felt my nipples were hard and feeling his tongue play with them like that just kills me. He gave both of them attention rubbing and sucking on them till he was satisfied that he had made my nipples hard and wet he began kissing my neck and then my cheek. Him:"relax a bit okay or nunus your world will seem upside down" Me:"thank you for that" He smiled and just kissed me I

responded to him as he opened up my legs and got in between them my heart was beating out of my chest the entire time, he pulled away from the kiss. Him:"Rori please relax come on I'll hurt you" Me:"hello earth to Lwazi I'm not used to having a bulky man on top of me remember? So excuse me for being scared" Him:"do you trust me?" I shook my head Him:"then hold my hand okay? Pinch me I don't care" I nod and he just took off his jacket followed by his shirt I looked at him Him:"you can have this you know?" Me:"have what? " Him:"this.." He attacked my lips with a kiss I responded and yeah he held my hand his lips are so big,wet,smooth and juicy he moved his hand down my stomach to my undies but fear kicked in and I caught his hand he pulled away from the kiss. Him:"what's wrong?" Me:"don't" Him:"I won't hurt you I just want to feel something" Me:"what?" Him:'you won't understand so you relax, il won't hurt you I

promise" He pecked my lower lip Him:"I
promise" I slowly let go of his hand and he
continued kissing me and his hand going down
on me he pushed it down my undies and just
started rubbing me I gasped in between the kiss,
he gave my hand a tight grip and just tried
pushing his thumb in me and it hurt I pushed
him off with tears threatening to flow he said he
won't hurt me but shit hit the fan. Him:"shit I'm
sorry.... I'm sorry okay" He began kissing me all
over my face. Him:"I'm sorry" I nod but still the
shit hit the fan and there ain't no turning back.
Him:"I didn't mean to Rori" I just held on his face
Me:" I said it's okay" Him:"you are crying though"
Me;"I can't stop them back" He smiled a bit and
just unhooked his belt and just took off his
trousers oh Holy Mary mother of Jesus have
mercy on my pussy he's rock solid he pushed
my legs further apart and just attacked my lips
with a kiss and just having him on top of me
feeling how hard it is on my vagina just creeps

me up he pulled away from the kiss pulling my lower lip he moved his hands down and tried to pull of my underwear so I just lifted my weight up and he pulled it off. Him:"where did you learn that?" I shrug He soon got in between my legs and just sucked on me my legs just started shivering I gasped and held on his head as he went deeper and deeper with his tongue and when I was starting to get extra excited he stopped and just pulled me down a bit.

Him:"Mrs Mkhize you'll chew your lip off" I slapped his chest and he smiled, he slowly took off his shorts Holy Molly brother of all things I almost screamed but I just covered my mouth. He just parted my legs and just held on to my left hand with our rings touching,pulling on my lower lip with the other one he kissed me and tried to penetrate me I just pulled my hand from his and just sunk my nails into his back he continued trying to push himself in and then the hymen broke it felt like my entire world just

crumbled down fuck this shit hurts so bad he began taking slow thrusts going deeper with every thrust, he pulled away from the kiss which I didn't want to, his movement was slow and steady as he picked up my leg and just did his thing with ms moaning out his name. Him:"are you okay?" Me:"mmh" Him:"relax or you'll skin me alive" I was wanted to laugh but seeing him all sweaty on top of me and the stuff going on in between my legs I just couldn't I relaxed my hands and held on to him instead of sinking my nails into his skin just when things seemed to be grey a sense of pleasure kicked in as little as it was it felt so good. Me:"Lwazi please" I moaned Him:"please what?" I quickly shook my head Him:"you okay though?" Me:"mmh" Hr just pecked my lips and just had his fun with me not forgetting to be gentle Him:"fuck.. Are you okay?" He kissed my cheek as he laid down besides me Me:"yeah so why are you swearing?" Him:"cause I want to.. Come let's go

take a shower" Me:"go take one in your room"
Him:"my God just come..." He got of the bed
and just picked me up and led me to the
bathroom he got into the shower with me and
we took a simple innocent shower no funny
business but I got out first, I went to put on
some body lotion he came out while I was
putting on my body lotion. His phone rang and
he quickly attended it from the sounds of things
he wasn't happy at all he threatened the caller
than hung up. Him:"umh I have to leave and
from the looks of things for the entire week or
more" Me:"oh troubles at work?" Him:"yeah
there's something urgent I have to take care off"
Me:"cool with me" Him:"you sure?" Me:"yeah go
I'll be fine" Him:"okay and no parties" Me:"don't
even try it" He just kissed my cheek and walked
out. Me:"rules are back on" Him:"yeah when I'm
away like this" Me:"even when you are back
Lwazi so please do you" Him:"oh if you say so
see you when I get back" I nod and just put on

my hand cream, he actually slammed my door
okay weird why is he so attached like a gum on
paper. I went to my bags and just took out my
fluffy pink PJs and my slippers I walked out of
the room downstairs to the living room I
switched on the TV I put on the music channel
I'm not scared cause I know the house is
guarded 24/7 so yeah. [phone rings] . Leroy
Me:"what do you want?" Him:"to apologies Rori"
Me:"screw you Leroy what you did didn't only
hurt me but my entire family so please don't call
me I'll call you" I hung up nxa he has some
nerve calling me with his lame apology. I dialed
Unathi's number and she answered all cheery.
Me:"friend I need your help" her:"with?" Me:"I
need you to come over the house with Kuli for a
sleep over but first buy me some morning after
pill" She screamed in my ears Me:"geez what's
with you?" Her:"he sliced the cake? Chocolate
cake turned into vanilla cream" Me:"mxm will
you come or what?" Her:"where is the husband"

Me:" he went out to make us some money so get ready I'll tell the driver to come and fetch you guys" Her:"okay we'll go and pack right now and I want my money for the pills" Me:"I'll give the driver some money you just have to purchase it" Her:"okay see you" Me:'bring some weed too and clothes for two weeks" Her:"okay we are on our way babe see you" I hung up and just relaxed on the couch waiting for my besties to come then the real party begins when cat is away the rats come out to play and since Lwazi is gone I'll be fine I'll have fun. . THE END

[03/08, 16:04] Mk: ღ My handsome monster
-Our holy matrimony . . . EPISODE 17 . . .
RORI . . I'm so not used to this new house at
all but I'll be fine right I mean I'll just seat here
and watched TV all day without doing anything

big, the gate buzzer rang so I went to answer..
Me:"yeah" "It's us open up" Me:"yay jump the fence" "You crazy we don't want to get electrocuted so open up" Me:"fine wait" I put the phone down and just put in the code and opened the gate and I disabled the alarm. See what I mean this house is like those military houses but it makes me feel safer but also suspicious why go to such lengths of security if he only owns hotels and a bar huh. I opened the door and just let the girls in, their jaws literally dropped when they walked in I pushed them into place. Me:"you are drooling so come in" Una:"you are living the life friend jeez I'm not going home anymore" Me:"Lwazi will kick you out" Una:"he can try" Me:"whatever so got what I asked?" Kuli:"you mean the pills?" Me:"no the brain....of course the pills" Kuli:"yes but we won't give them to you" Me:"and why not?" Una:"we want details" Me:"guys come on I will tell you everything just give them to me please"

Una:"so you want to kill Lwazi's baby?" Me:"are you crazy there is no baby" Kuli:"let it be I mean he'll...." Me:"just give me the freaking pills please" Una:"okay don't bite our heads off" She took the box of pills and just shoved them in my hands. Me:"thank you... Do you guys want anything to drink?" Kuli:"what are you offering" Me:"I don't know check the fridge" They followed me to the kitchen and they just took a bottle of white dry wine and three glasses. Una:"bring the tub of ice cream" Me:"hee you'll finish everything in my house on the first day" Kuli:"we are your guests" Me:"whatever" I poured myself some water and drunk the pills. Una:"now can you tell us?" Me:"what?" Una:"the reason you are taking those pills and walking like you have a knife stuck in between your legs" Me:"can you guys be more nosey?" Kuli:"we told you about our first times now share" I sat down in the middle with the tub of ice cream on my lap. Me:"fine Lwazi and I

had sex" Kuli:"we need more than that"

Me:"guys he shoved his dick into my vagina and went up and down" Una:" you are

hopeless do you know that?" Me:"but that's what happened the moment he finished rubbing me with his hand and oh going down on me with his tongue and then he was playing with my belly ring with his tongue" Una:"was he

gentle like ask if he's hurting you or not?"

Me;"throughout the whole thing , he was like 'are you okay' and he apologized at some point"

Kuli:"is he xtra large, xxl, Large ,medium or small" Me:" what's the difference?" Kuli:"well

xxl the moment he touches you he doesn't waste time you just burst" I couldn't stop

laughing this is just creepy. Me:"okay and xtra large?" Una:"my favorite" Me:"lol wow

okay" Una:"well if he's xtra large the moment he is inside you feel your entire walls tearing up like that sense of pleasure just kicks in"

Me:"okay and large?" They did a clap once.

Kuli:"now that's the yummy one.. Friend if he's large the pain ain't that much but the pleasure girl woo the pleasure just is everywhere"

Una:"your other sense wake up and you just reach orgasm every two minutes your screaming is just on another level of excitement"

Kuli:"and medium and small are just those 'ahh' stuff no nail sinking or gasping and sometimes you don't feel anything at all"

Me:"Imao wow Jesus Christ have mercy on your children for they have sinned so much"

Una:"so what size is he?" Me:"umh I'll go with Large"

Them:"yes" Me:"and then?" Una:"then you have to reil him in friend"

Me:"he's not a fish okay" Kuli:"this girl you don't know us women we'll just snatch him away from you just like that"

Me:"have fun trying now please where is my weed" Una:"you'll have to seduce him"

Me:"hold up I don't need to seduce anyone okay Lwazi and I have an understanding there are rules in place"

Kuli:"oh yeah?" Me:"guys no

seducing of Lwazi now stop" They shrug and we just continued eating the ice cream and drinking our wine this side smoking weed believe me life ain't boring right now we finished an entire bottle and instead of cooking we ordered two large pizzas if Lwazi saw me I'd be dead right now, talking about him he decided to call me so I just ran to the kitchen busy stumbling around. Me:"he...hey"
Him:"he...he..what are you doing there to make you stutter like this?" Me:"who?me?" Him:"no your twin, what's going in there" [Chuckling]
Him:"and who are those busy chuckling in the background" Me:"what background? Psst it's nothing really?" I covered the speaker on the phone. Me:"guys shut up" I gave my attention to Lwazi Me:"you were saying?" Him:"you'll regret it if you dare have a party in that house Rori"
Me:"when are you coming back? I miss you"
Him:"yeah right I ain't falling for that I said no parties" Me:"but I'm being serious I miss you"

Him:"you know what go and sleep off that weed you smoked then we'll talk" Me:"who said anything about Smoking? Where are you anyway" Him:"its best you don't know and please stop dishing out the house address like that and tell your friends not to tell anyone where we are" Me:"huh?" Him:"just do as I say" Me:"yes father now where are you" Him:"just sleep tight I'll be back when I'm done this side" Me:"O-kay " He hung up and I just went back to my girls and we had our fun. . LWAZI Leaving Rori after our wedding was so not part of the plan or to even find myself in Durban stuck in a shady hotel I think I'm hating this every single day like the moving from place to place I hate all of it. "Who were you talking to?" Me:"just checking up on Rori" Him:"so how is she?" Me:"Partying up a storm in my crib bra I'm sure even smoking" He chuckled Me:"that's not funny Senzo instead of being here doing heists I should be there getting her to trust me so that

she can sign that contract" Him:"so Karabo is done with the contract?" Me:"yeah now all she has to do is sign" Him:"this is something I never thought I'd see a man anxious to give a woman all his belongings" Me:"if you knew that people are coming for everything you have you'd even donate your millions to charity" Him:"don't you think she'll use that against you like now she has more that 5 million rand in capital and property worth millions too" Me:"and who said I'll tell her what the contract is about? I'll come up with something" Him:"she's got it all dude I was surprised when I saw 3 mil going to property" Me:"you focus too much on my finances dude" Him:"its my job now come the guys are waiting for you" Me:"this thing is really weighing me down this job doesn't feel right at all" Him:"we can't do it without you" Me:"I know but...you know what forget it I'm sure it's the wedding jitters" I walked into the living room with Senzo right behind me I sat down near Dre.

Well there are 8 of us in this little scheme excluding the cops and security guards. There is Petro(Ptee), Jerome, Senzo,Siya,Kwezi, Cumani, my brother (Karabo) and myself and we take turns on who is the leader of the heist and this time its my turn I have everything planned out like crazy but robbing the truck that transports money that's just another thing but they are my expertise. Jerome:"so what's the plan?" Me:"where is Karabo? He needs to know his target too this..." "Sorry I'm late bra your contract is hard to finish Lwazi" Me:"sit down Karabo...umh guys in front of you are files of who does what and I'll deal with the security cars" Siya:"are we going to have a shoot out or a quite one?" Me:"let's make it quite as can be...so I'll get our guys in each car and there will be a road block since they use private routes" Siya:"their weakness" I shook my head Me:"they use one lane roads so it'll be hard trying to run them over" Karabo:"wait I'm in the heist car?"

Dude are you tired of me as your brother"
Me:"think 3 million each big brother" Karabo:"
hallelujah let's do it" Petro:"so it's on Saturday?"
Me:"yes Saturday night" Jerome:"and they
chose the night so I'm in the back? Umh no
shoot outs?" Me:"shoot if you get shot at every
man for himself in such situations...kill him or
he'll kill you" They all nod [Message alert] I
checked my phone and it was a WhatsApp text
from Rori. Me:"Dre take your eyes off my phone
and read your file" Dre;"Rori with a heart who is
that?" Me:"you read file yours leave phone mine
alone" He shrug and just went back to his file I
opened the text and it was a picture okay
download Karabo:" I don't understand how
you left her all alone at home" Me:"what did you
want me to do? Bring her along?" Karabo:"pretty
much she's right for this" Me:"don't even think
about it...now how is the contract" Karabo:"well
I got rid of the loop hole and added a clause just
like you asked" Me:"good now umh y'all tell me

if you want to change anything" Dre:"DAMN!!!" I looked at him and he was staring at my phone. Me:"what you looking at?" He shook his head, I looked at my phone and I found a pic of Rori in black lace undies and bra with a red robe on top puffing a cloud of smoke at the camera a part of me was like _____ and on the smoking part I was _____ but damn she looked fine. Me:"Dre" Dre:"yes?" Me:"go and take out your eyeballs and wash them' Dre:"why?" Me:'you saw grown up stuff and stop smiling like that jeez it's creeping me out" [Message alert] I checked again it was a picture from Rori this time there was no smoke just her laying on the bed with this smile on her face eyes closed. I cleared my throat and just crossed my legs and just scratched my nose. Siya:"what is she telling you?" Me:"heyi read your file" They all burst out laughing Me:"guys listen my wife is my wife and if she sends me her nude pics they are meant for me not you"

Karabo:"nudes? Can I see them?" Me:"can I fuck your wife?" Karabo:"no are you insane?"

Me:"then here is my answer no are you insane" I focused on my phone and just looked at the pics so mouth watering but I thought she said the rules are back on but now she's making me horny as fuck sending me such seductive pics why though. Siya:"okay back to us now so how will we do this?" Me:"okay umh there will be decoy cars at the front and when you get to the garage they'll start the goose chase"

Karabo:"and we'll leave in those cars?" Me:'no in the garage you'll find other cars different colors and stuff... But you'll use the back doors they lead into the bushes and then you are home free" Karabo:"you got that sorted now for our rondevoe? Where is that happening?"

Me:"normal spot" . They all nod Me:"good now please drink and enjoy yourselves cause Saturday night y'all are about to commit suicide" Jerome came with some beers and we

ordered some pizza just for fun now he's is the downside to all of this we are sharing a room some will sleep on the floor all I know is that the couch is mine talk to my bootcamp trainer for that. We drunk till midnight and when I was drunk I just chased everyone away from my room I need to sleep and before that I decided to call Rori she answered with a fuck. Me:"why are you swearing?" Her:'who is this?" Me:"futsek wake up" She burst out laughing Her:"ouch,ouch...umh Lwazi people are sleeping and the witches are up to bewitch us so which one are you?" Me:"I'm the witch so what's wrong?" Her:"nothing really I just rolled out of the couch and you know collided with the floor" Me:'what happened to your bed?" Her:"sold it" Me:"fetch it now" Her:" you are drunk and you are going to pee in your bed" Me:"tell me about the pictures you sent me,what do they mean?" She giggled Me:"Rori" Her:"I miss you when are you coming back?" Me:"I'm not

coming back Rori I think there are bad guys after me so this is goodbye" Her:"Lwazi please don't die yet please" Me:"why are you crying now? I'm not coming back" Her:"please say you are coming back tomorrow" Me:"why should I come back? You said the rules are back on" Me:"please just come back.... " She was really crying but hearing her cry like that just does something to me big time. Me:'so what's in it for me if I come back?" Then she giggles Me:"so?" Her:"Me" whispering Me:"why are you whispering?" Her:"I don't want my friends to know what we are talking about it's private" Me:'oh so if I come back I'll get you?" Her:"mmh" Me:'in that black lace two piece?" Her:"I have a none piece" Me:"what's that?" Her:"my body suite" Me:"oh so it's without any hassles?" Her:"mmh or do you want to unwrap it yourself?" Me:"yes from that black lace two piece and a bottle of white wine for me" Her:"you will hurt me more than today though"

Me:"I didn't do it on purpose though it was your first time" Her:"so you'll be gentle next time?"
Me:"I'll be I promise" Her:"so when will you be back? I want you to teach me a few tricks"
Me:"is it?" Her:"mmh I want to be on top this time" I chuckled Her:"Lwazi I'm not joking" Me:"i know but you just caught me off guard so what happened to rules?" Her:"really are we doing this naughty talk or not" Me:"okay okay go ahead" Her:"so I'll be on top?" Me:"below, on top, standing, on your tummy anything you want"
Her:"mmh I want you home" Me:"so what are you wearing now?" Her:"a pink bikini and a white sports bra" Me:"can I see? Just to make sure?"
Her:"my camera peeps are sleeping" Me:"there is a selfie stick in my sports bag go take it"
Her:"you want to see me dry or wet?" Me:"dry or wet? Dry or wet? Damn I'll go with wet and you'll become sober" Her:"but my phone will die"
Me:"it's waterproofed now hurry up" Her:"so will you show me something?" Me:"of course now

stop sniffing around like you are smoking cocaine" Her:"I'm so fucking missing you.. Hurry and come back Lwazi get your black ass home"
Me:"mxm when I'm there you'll be saying rules, rules and rules denying me the cookie"
Her:"want me to take the pics or not?" Me:"hold up I'm sorry go take them" She hung up and I'm sure she went to take the pics so I laid there waiting for a notification and I didn't wait for that long cause soon it beeped and hallelujah just want I want to see she even ruined her hair all I know is her hair is long when relaxed and the water just showed how long it was but enough about the hair she sent me two pics in the shower pretty much naked and one of her with a towel wrapped around God I pray I don't get arrested I can't miss this hallelujah. I called her and she picked up busy sniffing.
Me:"you crying?" Her:"I need some meat to look at" Me:"so if I send you the pic what do I get?" She burst out laughing Her:"screw you I'm out

the witches are done for the night so I suggest you sleep too and you'll feel sober when you wake up I feel sober already so I'm going back to alcohol and... Bye Lwazi" Me:"wait Rori I...umh I..." Her:"I..I..what?" Me:"I'll see you on Monday or less" Her:"okay rules are back on now sleep tight" Me:"I know you too" She hung up jeez Lwazi since when do you get tongue tied when you are talking to a girl I hate you I hate you so much for this look at this body look at it but no you just let her slip through your fingers look at how thick she is now you are just letting her slip away like slip away you idiot sleep

♡ My handsome monster-Our holy matrimony ... EPISODE 17 ... RORI ... I'm so not used to this new house at all but I'll be fine right I mean I'll just seat here and watched TV all day without doing anything big, the gate buzzer rang so I went to answer.. Me:"yeah" "It's us open up" Me:"yay jump the

fence" "You crazy we don't want to get electrocuted so open up" Me:"fine wait" I put the phone down and just put in the code and opened the gate and I disabled the alarm. See what I mean this house is like those military houses but it makes me feel safer but also suspicious why go to such lengths of security if he only owns hotels and a bar huh. I opened the door and just let the girls in, their jaws literally dropped when they walked in I pushed them into place. Me:"you are drooling so come in" Una:"you are living the life friend jeez I'm not going home anymore" Me:"Lwazi will kick you out" Una:"he can try" Me:"whatever so got what I asked?" Kuli:"you mean the pills?" Me:"no the brain....of course the pills" Kuli:"yes but we won't give them to you" Me:"and why not?" Una:"we want details" Me:"guys come on I will tell you everything just give them to me please" Una:"so you want to kill Lwazi's baby?" Me:"are you crazy there is no baby" Kuli:"let it be I mean

he'll...." Me:"just give me the freaking pills please" Una:"okay don't bite our heads off" She took the box of pills and just shoved them in my hands. Me:"thank you... Do you guys want anything to drink?" Kuli:"what are you offering" Me:"I don't know check the fridge" They followed me to the kitchen and they just took a bottle of white dry wine and three glasses. Una:"bring the tub of ice cream" Me:"hee you'll finish everything in my house on the first day" Kuli:"we are your guests" Me:"whatever" I poured myself some water and drunk the pills. Una:"now can you tell us?" Me:"what?" Una:"the reason you are taking those pills and walking like you have a knife stuck in between your legs" Me:"can you guys be more nosey?" Kuli:"we told you about our first times now share" I sat down in the middle with the tub of ice cream on my lap. Me:"fine Lwazi and I had sex" Kuli:"we need more than that" Me:"guys he shoved his dick into my vagina and

went up and down" Una:" you are hopeless do you know that?" Me:"but that's what happened the moment he finished rubbing me with his hand and oh going down on me with his tongue and then he was playing with my belly ring with his tongue" Una:"was he gentle like ask if he's hurting you or not?" Me;"throughout the whole thing , he was like 'are you okay' and he apologized at some point" Kuli:"is he xtra large, xxl, Large ,medium or small" Me:" what's the difference?" Kuli:"well xxl the moment he touches you he doesn't waste time you just burst" I couldn't stop laughing this is just creepy. Me:"okay and xtra large?" Una:"my favorite" Me:"lol wow okay" Una:"well if he's xtra large the moment he is inside you feel your entire walls tearing up like that sense of pleasure just kicks in" Me:"okay and large?" They did a clap once. Kuli:"now that's the yummy one.. Friend if he's large the pain ain't that much but the pleasure

girl woo the pleasure just is everywhere"

Una:"your other sense wake up and you just reach orgasm every two minutes your screaming is just on another level of excitement"

Kuli:"and medium and small are just those 'ahh' stuff no nail sinking or gasping and sometimes you don't feel anything at all"

Me:"Imao wow Jesus Christ have mercy on your children for they have sinned so much"

Una:"so what size is he?" Me:"umh I'll go with Large"

Them:"yes" Me:"and then?" Una:"then you have to reil him in friend"

Me:"he's not a fish okay" Kuli:"this girl you don't know us women we'll just snatch him away from you just like that"

Me:"have fun trying now please where is my weed" Una:"you'll have to seduce him"

Me:"hold up I don't need to seduce anyone okay Lwazi and I have an understanding there are rules in place"

Kuli:"oh yeah?" Me:"guys no seducing of Lwazi now stop"

They shrug and we just continued eating the ice cream

and drinking our wine this side smoking
weed believe me life ain't boring right now we
finished an entire bottle and instead of cooking
we ordered two large pizzas if Lwazi saw me I'd
be dead right now, talking about him he decided
to call me so I just ran to the kitchen busy
stumbling around. Me:"he...hey"
Him:"he...he..what are you doing there to make
you stutter like this?" Me:"who?me?" Him:"no
your twin, what's going in there" [Chuckling]
Him:"and who are those busy chuckling in the
background" Me:"what background? Psst it's
nothing really?" I covered the speaker on the
phone. Me:"guys shut up" I gave my attention to
Lwazi Me:"you were saying?" Him:"you'll regret it
if you dare have a party in that house Rori"
Me:"when are you coming back? I miss you"
Him:"yeah right I ain't falling for that I said no
parties" Me:"but I'm being serious I miss you"
Him:"you know what go and sleep off that weed
you smoked then we'll talk" Me:"who said

anything about Smoking? Where are you anyway" Him:"its best you don't know and please stop dishing out the house address like that and tell your friends not to tell anyone where we are" Me:"huh?" Him:"just do as I say" Me:"yes father now where are you" Him:"just sleep tight I'll be back when I'm done this side" Me:"O-kay " He hung up and I just went back to my girls and we had our fun. . LWAZI Leaving Rori after our wedding was so not part of the plan or to even find myself in Durban stuck in a shady hotel I think I'm hating this every single day like the moving from place to place I hate all of it. "Who were you talking to?" Me:"just checking up on Rori" Him:"so how is she?" Me:"Partying up a storm in my crib bra I'm sure even smoking" He chuckled Me:"that's not funny Senzo instead of being here doing heists I should be there getting her to trust me so that she can sign that contract" Him:"so Karabo is done with the contract?" Me:"yeah now all she

has to do is sign" Him:"this is something I never thought I'd see a man anxious to give a woman all his belongings" Me:"if you knew that people are coming for everything you have you'd even donate your millions to charity" Him:"don't you think she'll use that against you like now she has more that 5 million rand in capital and property worth millions too" Me:"and who said I'll tell her what the contract is about? I'll come up with something" Him:"she's got it all dude I was surprised when I saw 3 mil going to property" Me:"you focus too much on my finances dude" Him:"its my job now come the guys are waiting for you" Me:"this thing is really weighing me down this job doesn't feel right at all" Him:"we can't do it without you" Me:"I know but...you know what forget it I'm sure it's the wedding jitters" I walked into the living room with Senzo right behind me I sat down near Dre. Well there are 8 of us in this little scheme excluding the cops and security guards. There

is Petro(Ptee), Jerome, Senzo,Siya,Kwezi, Cumani, my brother (Karabo) and myself and we take turns on who is the leader of the heist and this time its my turn I have everything planned out like crazy but robbing the truck that transports money that's just another thing but they are my expertise. Jerome:"so what's the plan?" Me:"where is Karabo? He needs to know his target too this..." "Sorry I'm late bra your contract is hard to finish Lwazi" Me:"sit down Karabo...umh guys in front of you are files of who does what and I'll deal with the security cars" Siya:"are we going to have a shoot out or a quite one?" Me:"let's make it quite as can be...so I'll get our guys in each car and there will be a road block since they use private routes" Siya:"their weakness" I shook my head Me:"they use one lane roads so it'll be hard trying to run them over" Karabo:"wait I'm in the heist car? Dude are you tired of me as your brother" Me:"think 3 million each big brother" Karabo:"

hallelujah let's do it" Petro:"so it's on Saturday?"
Me:"yes Saturday night" Jerome:"and they
chose the night so I'm in the back? Umh no
shoot outs?" Me:"shoot if you get shot at every
man for himself in such situations...kill him or
he'll kill you" They all nod [Message alert] I
checked my phone and it was a WhatsApp text
from Rori. Me:"Dre take your eyes off my phone
and read your file" Dre;"Rori with a heart who is
that?" Me:"you read file yours leave phone mine
alone" He shrug and just went back to his file I
opened the text and it was a picture okay
download Karabo:" I don't understand how
you left her all alone at home" Me:"what did you
want me to do? Bring her along?" Karabo:"pretty
much she's right for this" Me:"don't even think
about it...now how is the contract" Karabo:"well
I got rid of the loop hole and added a clause just
like you asked" Me:"good now umh y'all tell me
if you want to change anything" Dre:"DAMN!!!" I
looked at him and he was staring at my phone.

Me:"what you looking at?" He shook his head, I looked at my phone and I found a pic of Rori in black lace undies and bra with a red robe on top puffing a cloud of smoke at the camera a part of me was like _____ and on the smoking part I was _____ but damn she looked fine. Me:"Dre" Dre:"yes?" Me:"go and take out your eyeballs and wash them' Dre:"why?" Me:'you saw grown up stuff and stop smiling like that jeez it's creeping me out" [Message alert] I checked again it was a picture from Rori this time there was no smoke just her laying on the bed with this smile on her face eyes closed. I cleared my throat and just crossed my legs and just scratched my nose. Siya:"what is she telling you?" Me:"heyi read your file" They all burst out laughing Me:"guys listen my wife is my wife and if she sends me her nude pics they are meant for me not you" Karabo:"nudes? Can I see them?" Me:"can I fuck your wife?" Karabo:"no are you insane?"

Me:"then here is my answer no are you insane" I focused on my phone and just looked at the pics so mouth watering but I thought she said the rules are back on but now she's making me horny as fuck sending me such seductive pics why though. Siya:"okay back to us now so how will we do this?" Me:"okay umh there will be decoy cars at the front and when you get to the garage they'll start the goose chase" Karabo:"and we'll leave in those cars?" Me:'no in the garage you'll find other cars different colors and stuff... But you'll use the back doors they lead into the bushes and then you are home free" Karabo:"you got that sorted now for our rondevoe? Where is that happening?" Me:"normal spot" . They all nod Me:"good now please drink and enjoy yourselves cause Saturday night y'all are about to commit suicide" Jerome came with some beers and we ordered some pizza just for fun now he's is the downside to all of this we are sharing a room

some will sleep on the floor all I know is that the couch is mine talk to my bootcamp trainer for that. We drunk till midnight and when I was drunk I just chased everyone away from my room I need to sleep and before that I decided to call Rori she answered with a fuck. Me:"why are you swearing?" Her:'who is this?" Me:"futsek wake up" She burst out laughing Her:"ouch,ouch...umh Lwazi people are sleeping and the witches are up to bewitch us so which one are you?" Me:"I'm the witch so what's wrong?" Her:"nothing really I just rolled out of the couch and you know collided with the floor" Me:'what happened to your bed?" Her:"sold it" Me:"fetch it now" Her:" you are drunk and you are going to pee in your bed" Me:"tell me about the pictures you sent me,what do they mean?" She giggled Me:"Rori" Her:"I miss you when are you coming back?" Me:"I'm not coming back Rori I think there are bad guys after me so this is goodbye" Her:"Lwazi please

don't die yet please" Me:"why are you crying now? I'm not coming back" Her:"please say you are coming back tomorrow" Me:"why should I come back? You said the rules are back on" Me:"please just come back.... " She was really crying but hearing her cry like that just does something to me big time. Me:'so what's in it for me if I come back?" Then she giggles Me:"so?" Her:"Me" whispering Me:"why are you whispering?" Her:"I don't want my friends to know what we are talking about it's private" Me:'oh so if I come back I'll get you?" Her:"mmh" Me:'in that black lace two piece?" Her:"I have a none piece" Me:"what's that?" Her:"my body suite" Me:"oh so it's without any hassles?" Her:"mmh or do you want to unwrap it yourself?" Me:"yes from that black lace two piece and a bottle of white wine for me" Her:"you will hurt me more than today though" Me:"I didn't do it on purpose though it was your first time" Her:"so you'll be gentle next time?"

Me:"I'll be I promise" Her:"so when will you be back? I want you to teach me a few tricks"
Me:"is it?" Her:"mmh I want to be on top this time" I chuckled Her:"Lwazi I'm not joking" Me:"i know but you just caught me off guard so what happened to rules?" Her:"really are we doing this naughty talk or not" Me:"okay okay go ahead" Her:"so I'll be on top?" Me:"below, on top, standing, on your tummy anything you want"
Her:"mmh I want you home" Me:"so what are you wearing now?" Her:"a pink bikini and a white sports bra" Me:"can I see? Just to make sure?"
Her:"my camera peeps are sleeping" Me:"there is a selfie stick in my sports bag go take it"
Her:"you want to see me dry or wet?" Me:"dry or wet? Dry or wet? Damn I'll go with wet and you'll become sober" Her:"but my phone will die"
Me:"it's waterproofed now hurry up" Her:"so will you show me something?" Me:"of course now stop sniffing around like you are smoking cocaine" Her:"I'm so fucking missing you.. Hurry

and come back Lwazi get your black ass home"

Me:"mxm when I'm there you'll be saying rules, rules and rules denying me the cookie"

Her:"want me to take the pics or not?" Me:"hold up I'm sorry go take them" She hung up and I'm sure she went to take the pics so I laid there waiting for a notification and I didn't wait for that long cause soon it beeped and hallelujah just want I want to see she even ruined her hair all I know is her hair is long when relaxed and the water just showed how long it was but enough about the hair she sent me two pics in the shower pretty much naked and one of her with a towel wrapped around God I pray I don't get arrested I can't miss this hallelujah. I called her and she picked up busy sniffing.

Me:"you crying?" Her:"I need some meat to look at" Me:"so if I send you the pic what do I get?"

She burst out laughing Her:"screw you I'm out the witches are done for the night so I suggest you sleep too and you'll feel sober when you

wake up I feel sober already so I'm going back to alcohol and... Bye Lwazi" Me:"wait Rori I...umh I..." Her:"I..I..what?" Me:"I'll see you on Monday or less" Her:"okay rules are back on now sleep tight" Me:"I know you too" She hung up jeez Lwazi since when do you get tongue tied when you are talking to a girl I hate you I hate you so much for this look at this body look at it but no you just let her slip through your fingers look at how thick she is now you are just letting her slip away like slip away you idiot sleep

[03/08, 16:04] Mk: ♡ My handsome monster -Our holy matrimony . . . EPISODE 18 . . . RORI* . . First rule of life never drink, eat ice cream and smoke weed like you are going to die or else you'll really wish you were dead like we were the entire week and this side Lwazi's phone was off the entire freaking week wait why am I so angry I mean we are not that lovers couple we are just an arrangement and

arrangements don't get angry at all. Me and the girls were in the kitchen making some breakfast and blasting away to Rae Sremmurd Up like Trump and believe me when this song is on full blast you won't want anything else we were busy singing along when. "Money fall on you Banana fall on you Prada fall on you Cause I'm in love you ehh" Us:"ahh" We began dancing around forgetting that we are holding knives in our hands going down to the side everything we did well that's until the music stopped. Me:"who dares sw..." "Rorisho come here" Me:"shit" I mumbled I quickly tied my robe and threw the cigarette in the sink smile girl smile and you'll get through this. The girls were already looking at him I'm sure drooling God bless me. "Rori I said.." Me:"I'm..I'm coming" I was wearing this short pink robe I'm not really a PJ fan so I normally sleep in my bikini but today I took a shower first and wore my bikini and it's bra then put on the robe on top I just gurgled up some

water and turned around to face Lwazi who came with friends I thought this was supposed to be our private house but now I walked as slow as I can. Lwazi:"hurry up" Me:'ehh these are my feet you know I stop if I want to you know" Lwazi:"try it" Me:"I'll try it vele" I mumbled Lwazi:"say what?" Me:'that you look handsome" Lwazi:"just follow me" I stopped and just held on my waist. Me:"Mkhize wee first I must come here then I must follow you which one is it exactly? Follow or wait here?" His stupid friends chuckled and also Karabo was here. Lwazi:"and what's funny?" They kept quite and Karabo just motioned that Lwazi will give me a beat down I pray to God he doesn't at all, I looked at Lwazi on the stairs and he had this creepy death stare on his face he just motioned that I follow him so I just and followed him up the stairs he walked into my bedroom and I walked in after. Him:"close the door" Me:"I closed it Lwazi" Him:"lock it"

Me:"haa but why? Lwazi I didn't mean for your friends to..." Him:"lock the door" Me:"okay but can I...?" He looked up at me so I just went to the door.. Me:"I'll be outside if you need me so when you are done just knock and I'll open for you" Him:" just lock the door I didn't say lock me in" Me:"oh so I should lock myself in too? Why?" Him:"Rorisho! " Me:'okay I'm locking it look see it's locked" Him:"come here" Me:"there as in there next to you?" Him:"here" He pointed in front of him oh Jehovah bless me, I walked towards him and just stood in front of him in between his legs, the moment his hands touched my waist i was freaked out. Him:"so i said no smoking in the house and you think Lwazi is an idiot I'll smoke" Me:" im sorry I.." Him:"no that's a waste of time apologizing when we both know you are not sorry" Me:"so no shouting?" Him:"you'd be excited wouldn't you?" Me:"over the moon" Him:"untie that" Me:"what?" Him:"I want to see what's under the

robe" Me:"my PJs" He moved his hands up my thighs. Him:"where are the PJs? I don't feel anything" Me:"you won't now move your hands" I pushed his hands off and he groaned holding on to the left arm. Me:"oh I'm sorry Lwazi...are you okay? I didn't mean to" I sat on the bed. Me:"you are bleeding Lwazi what happened?" He kept quiet Me:"Lwazi what happened?" Him:"it's nothing big this is just a wound bleed I'll live" Me:"you sure?" He nod Me:"if you say so then" Him:"yes I say so now come stand here like you were" Me:"but why and for what?" Him:"cause I'm asking you nicely so please play nicely too" I stood up and went to stand in front of him Lwazi has this weird smile on his face I don't understand it at all. He pulled me closer and just untied my robe. Him:'rules are off for now Rori you said I should come back home and I'd get you" Me:"I was high and drunk when I said that" Him:"so you didn't miss me?" Me:"just a little bit like tiny bit" Him:"how tiny?"

Me:"sand granule tiny" Him:"that's enough for me...." He pulled me to him . Him:"seat here"

Me:"should we be doing this with your friends and mine downstairs?" Him:"it's our house we can do whatever we want" I nod and just sat on his lap facing him. Me:"but your hand is hurt and I still don't know where you were or what hurt you" Him:"tiny details that don't matter" Me:"okay then" He kissed my neck Him:"for someone who doesn't care you are very worried about me" Me:"we live together Lwazi" Him:"I see" He pushed the robe off my shoulder and started kissing it going up my neck. Me:"Lwazi?" Him:"mmh" he hummed Me:"can you be more gentle please" Him:"mmh" He held on my cheek, he brushed his lips against mine he started pulling on my lower lip but why though. I won't dispute that felt good he started sucking on it slowly he stopped and just pecked my lips Him:"smoke suits you hey... But I'm not saying

you should smoke" Me:"I won't.." I was slowly unbuttoning his shirt staring into his eyes they seem so small compared to mine. He was busy smiling so I just leaned in and kissed him he responded flipping me over on the bed he groaned I'm guessing from pain he was busy rubbing my thighs I fixed myself up a bit and held on to his face he pulled away from the kiss and he was busy breathing heavily as he continued pecking my lips. Him:"do you want a baby?" Me:"huh?" Him:"let's make a baby" Me:"no are you mad? We shouldn't be doing this in the first place" Him:"why not?" Me:" I don't want a baby Lwazi" Him:"okay then" He just took off his shirt and reveled the bandage from his shoulder to his mid bicep what happened though I know asking will be a waste of my breath so yeah I just welcomed him back to my lips as he attacked the upper lip with his hand rubbing me above my undies he just pushed the bikin aside and started rubbing my clit I just

held on his face tighter he went deeper making me curl my toes and arch my back. Him:"you okay?" I nod Him:"let me take this off" I lifted myself up and he unhook my bra and then he went to pull down my undies, he unbuttoned his trousers and took them off leaving his boxers God help us all. Him:"you still in pain?" I shook my head , he nod and just pushed my legs further apart getting in between them. He kissed my tummy and went down on me kissing my inner thigh, he parted my folds and just started licking me I gasped and arched my back he continued going deeper on me making me to scream out his name even louder I'm sure the others downstairs heard me whatever it's my house I don't care I reached orgasm with my legs feeling numb as can be I came and he just licked me clean he came up to me. Him:"why are you sweating?" Me:"I was jogging" Him:"why did I even ask though?" Me:"cause you are stupid now that we all know" He pecked my lips

and just took off his shorts and came to kiss me i felt him try to enter me and shit it hurt i thought it wouldn't hurt anymore but now it hurts still this time I was even crying i could feel them flowing like crazy, he broke the kiss and just stared at me. Him:"am I hurting you?" I nod Him:"okay relax and I won't hurt you" He tried to hold me with his left hand then I'm sure the pain hit and he stopped fuck my screaming was on another level I'm sure the others heard me the pain didn't last for long but with Lwazi's left hand it wasn't the same story but nigga never gave up yoh #claponce . Him:"fuck" Me:"let me clean that up Lwazi you are seriously bleeding" He was laying on his back holding on to the left hand. Me:"can I?" He looked at me and slowly nod so I put on my robe and just walked into my end suite I saw a first aid kit in here somewhere. Me:"Lwazi take that one off" I shouted from the bathroom as I went through the cabinets and I found the small first aid kit I

washed my hands first and then went to him to find him sleeping the same way I left him.

Me:"really? I said take the bandage off" Him:"I freaking can't" Me:"so why are you shouting at me now? Come let me help you up so will you tell me what happened?" Him:"damn" Me:"sorry umh sit in between my legs" Him:'do you have any expertise when it comes to this?" Me:"let me see, of course not I'm just curious to what hurt you" He tried to stand up but I pinched the arm and that made him sit down. Me:'so what happened? Was there a shoot out at the hotels or club?" He cleared his throat Him:"so how was your week without me?" Me:"mxm....wait Lwazi this is.... Fuck this is a bullet wound what were you doing with guns? And the scars too what have you gotten me into" Him:"it's nothing okay just a misunderstanding" Me:"and they shot you and from the looks of things twice one grazed you exactly what were you doing?" Him:"ouch are you cleaning me or killing me?" Me:"both

now tell me the truth" Him:"it's best you don't know" I pressed hard on the wound. Him:"Rori maan" Me:"what are you hiding Lwazi I mean for an entire week you disappear and now two bullet wounds? Is this what you meant when you said you'll kill my family? Did you mean it?" Him:"no come on I'd never do that Rori this is just a stupid deal went wrong" Me:"what deal? what's with the tight security around the house?" Him:"come on that's just for safety" Me:"safety from what?" I shouted Him:"Rori calm down please..." Me:"mxm lift your hand slowly" Him:"Rori I'd never put you in danger i brought you here remember? So I'll protect you" Me:"protect me from what? When I lived with my granny I never wanted protection I'd protect myself not from bullets" Him:"this house is not like any other houses Rori that's why I bought it for you" Me:"so you saying a high wall with electrodes will protect me from a bullet?" Him:"the walls and Windows are sound and

bullet proofed" Me:"hehehe claponce Rorisho Mphahlele-Mkhize haibo yoh hands down Lwazi Andrew Mkhize so I'm actually in high maximum security prison? From guards, drivers and unruly alarms now to Bullet and sound proofed walls and windows? Haii I have seen it all" Him:"come on we....." Me:"haii move I'm done" Him:"let's talk about it" Me:'talk to the hand brother cause I'm not listening nkosi yami move" Him:"why don't you want to listen?" Me:"please get out of my room I'd like to shower and change the sheets" Him:"is it so wrong for me to want to protect my wife?" Me:"you know what Lwazi this getting attached stuff shouldn't be happening at all so yeah let's go back to just being an arrangement that was much better" Him:"you don't mean that?" Me:'wanna bet? Go take a shower and change please just don't get that bandage wet" Him:"Rori what do you want me to say? That I kill people? What did you expect? I'm not a

saint" Me:"who said I want a saint? Mxm just go please" He stood up and just came to me, he cupped my face and made me look up at him he pecked my lips. Him:"I just can't tell you this it's huge Rori bigger than me...listen there is something I want you to do for me" Me:"what?" Him:"I want you to sign a contract let's call it a umh a deal sealing contract that this house is yours for as long as you are my wife and I'll look after you financially no matter what" Me:"really? You want me to be signing contracts? Haven't I done enough?" Him:"you have but this is the last step" Me:"mxm fine where is the contract?" Him:"I'll bring it with me later" I nod Me:"cool Lwazi rules are on and they are staying this time" Him:"if that's what you want but I never planned to put your life in danger I'd never do that not in this life time" Me:"then what are you doing in the dark?" Him:"I'm going to take a shower" Me:"enjoy your shower hope you don't slip and fall and crack a nut" He kissed my

cheek and walked out, I just sank to the floor and took off the gloves I was wearing what is he hiding from me though but on the other hand the sex was good actually it was more than good it was unbelievable even with one hand he still knows his stuff oh goodness me what am I saying. "What happened" I lifted up my head and the girls were at my door.

Me:'ngempela? Ngempela? Like you just burst in like this is the gautrain station? Uh uh guys no this is not on for real" Una:"are you okay?"

Me:"yeah why?" Una:"uh the blood on your bed, did he..." Me:"hail guys that's not on at all please get out I'm fine now this is my room so wait for me outside" Kuli:"what did he do to you friend? Did he hurt you?" Me:"guys just...." "Rori I..."

Lwazi stood at the door topless but he was holding a shirt in hand. Me:"guys get out...."

They were just staring. Me:"I said get out guys" Una:"oh yeah umh see you later" They walked towards the door and Lwazi just moved

not even a single tooth showing he was pale. So I know he ain't interested in them, I stood up and just went to him. Me:"what's wrong?" Him:"umh the bandage is too tight so fix it but don't put your anger into it" I rolled my eyes Me:"seat down" Him:"can I say I'm sorry?" Me:"I'm not angry so you don't need to" I got on the bed and just knelt behind him I loosened up the bandage. Me:"is it okay now" Him:"mmh listen your friends should bounce as in today and no more sleep overs" Me:"okay I'll tell them" He put on his shirt I just sat on the bed and just stared at him I mean he's from a rich family what more does he want, he smiled and just leaned over to kiss me. Him:"I'll be fine and I'll make sure you are fine too" Me:"I don't care if they shoot your brains out" He chuckled Him:"come here" I folded my arms and just shook my head. Him:"one last hug please" He sulked Me:"mxm you look ugly" Him:"hug me and I'll look handsome" I got on my knees and

he bend over and we hugged he smelt so nice so heavenly too but he's not telling me everything I should know he slowly broke the hug and decided to attack my lips with a kiss he pulled away and just kissed my forehead.

Him:"I'll be back later and your friends should be gone by then" I nod He walked out I got off the bed and took the bloody sheets to the bathroom I just put them in the laundry basket I'm lazy I put clean sheets and just packed away the first aid now all I need is a shower I went to take a quick shower and I went to put on my body lotion and decided to wear my shorts and sports bra I just took my phone and called Lwazi which he quickly picked up. Me:"umh if you don't mind please pass by the mall and buy me a sketch book and some pencils and crayons even wax crayons" Him:"and you want people to think I'm a kid?" Me:"I said if you can" Him:"fine one sketch book or?" Me:"two will be fine and can you get me some paint" Him:"haili

maan no chose one thing" Me:"just buy those things I asked for" Him:"okay but I'll be back late" Me:"just bring me what I ordered"
Him:"cool then bye" Me:"and a tub of chocolate ice cream and..." Him:"just text me everything you need okay" Me:"okay cool" I hung up and just texted him even some morning after pills which this time I'll take tomorrow morning yoh the guy who said was busy called me.
Me:"what?" Him:"what's with the pills Rori?"
Me:"just a precaution" Him:"wagafa kao bona[you are crazy I see] I better not find out about any pills you hear me I'll kill you" Me:"but Lwazi I don't want to be pregnant I still have to plan my future"_ Him:"well I'm not going to buy any of those stupid pills" Me:'you are stupid nxa" Him:"listen to me.... If I see any pill package at that house I'll kill you" Me:"screw you Lwazi I know the pharmacy I'll buy them myself" Him:"have fun" I just hung up angry as hell how dare he think that he can control me I

mean this is my body my body hi it's mine and it's my womb yeah sure you did the work but this is my body nxa and now I have to throw my friends out or he'll have a fit when he gets back I found them watching TV so I just threw myself on the couch. Me:'guys here is the deal y'all will have to move out hey Lwazi is having his mid life crisis so he'll have a fit" Una:"so what happened up there?" Me:"nothing really that was Lwazi's blood" Una:"what happened?" Me:"that's for me to know guys so please umh...so please he's not in a good mood and please take the morning after pill box with you asemblief" Kuli:"yoh friend let's go pack before they get the dogs to chase us out" Me:"yoh hallelujah really Kuli? You know what stay but if Lwazi finds you here that's your problem not mine, yoh so much for trying to warn people this is what I tried to do for Leroy but no you guys know better you want to make an enemy of Lwazi halala enjoy it" I went to my kitchen

and just poured myself some juice I went back to the living room and sat down on the one seater couch. Una:"friend see you when we go to fetch our results" Me:"we are not in matric yet friend" Una:"work with me here and please come help me pack" Me:"with outmost pleasure come let's go" Una:"Kuli let's go" Kuli:"I'm still watching TV" Me:"the driver can't go back and forth he won't agree" Kuli:"mxm" Wow anyway I went to help Unathi pack the only logical person in this house and when we were done we found Kuli packed too I just called the driver for them and he went to load their bags so I shared a hug with Una but Kuli just gave me half a hug.

Whatever I went back inside and just switched on the alarms and then it's TV time♡ My handsome monster-Our holy matrimony . . .

EPISODE 18 . . RORI* . . First rule of life never drink,eat ice cream and smoke weed like you are going to die or else you'll really wish you were dead like we were the entire week and this

side Lwazi's phone was off the entire freaking week wait why am I so angry I mean we are not that lovers couple we are just an arrangement and arrangements don't get angry at all. Me and the girls were in the kitchen making some breakfast and blasting away to Rae Sremmur Up like Trump and believe me when this song is on full blast you won't want anything else we were busy singing along when. "Money fall on you Banana fall on you Prada fall on you Cause I'm in love you ehh" Us:"ahh" We began dancing around forgetting that we are holding knives in our hands going down to the side everything we did well that's until the music stopped. Me:"who dares sw..." "Rorisho come here" Me:"shit" I mumbled I quickly tied my robe and threw the cigarette in the sink smile girl smile and you'll get through this. The girls were already looking at him I'm sure drooling God bless me. "Rori I said.." Me:"I'm..I'm coming" I was wearing this short

pink robe I'm not really a PJ fan so I normally sleep in my bikini but today I took a shower first and wore my bikini and it's bra then put on the robe on top I just gurgled up some water and turned around to face Lwazi who came with friends I thought this was supposed to be our private house but now I walked as slow as I can. Lwazi:"hurry up" Me:'ehh these are my feet you know I stop if I want to you know" Lwazi:"try it" Me:"I'll try it vele" I mumbled Lwazi:"say what?" Me:'that you look handsome" Lwazi:"just follow me" I stopped and just held on my waist. Me:"Mkhize wee first I must come here then I must follow you which one is it exactly? Follow or wait here?" His stupid friends chuckled and also Karabo was here. Lwazi:"and what's funny?" They kept quite and Karabo just motioned that Lwazi will give me a beat down I pray to God he doesn't at all, I looked at Lwazi on the stairs and he had this creepy death stare on his face he just motioned that I follow

him so I just and followed him up the stairs
he walked into my bedroom and I walked in
after. Him:"close the door" Me:"I closed it Lwazi"
Him:"lock it" Me:"haa but why? Lwazi I didn't
mean for your friends to..." Him:"lock the door"
Me:"okay but can I...?" He looked up at me so I
just went to the door.. Me:"I'll be outside if you
need me so when you are done just knock and
I'll open for you" Him:" just lock the door I
didn't say lock me in" Me:"oh so I should lock
myself in too? Why?" Him:"Rorisho! " Me:'okay
I'm locking it look see it's locked" Him:"come
here" Me:"there as in there next to you?"
Him:"here" He pointed in front of him oh
Jehovah bless me, I walked towards him and
just stood in front of him in between his legs,
the moment his hands touched my waist i was
freaked out. Him:"so i said no smoking in the
house and you think Lwazi is an idiot I'll smoke"
Me:" im sorry I.." Him:"no that's a waste of time
apologizing when we both know you are not

sorry" Me:"so no shouting?" Him:"you'd be excited wouldn't you?" Me:"over the moon" Him:"untie that" Me:"what?" Him:"I want to see what's under the robe" Me:"my PJs" He moved his hands up my thighs. Him:"where are the PJs? I don't feel anything" Me:"you won't now move your hands" I pushed his hands off and he groaned holding on to the left arm. Me:"oh I'm sorry Lwazi...are you okay? I didn't mean to" I sat on the bed. Me:"you are bleeding Lwazi what happened?" He kept quiet Me:"Lwazi what happened?" Him:"it's nothing big this is just a wound bleed I'll live" Me:"you sure?" He nod Me:"if you say so then" Him:"yes I say so now come stand here like you were" Me:"but why and for what?" Him:"cause I'm asking you nicely so please play nicely too" I stood up and went to stand in front of him Lwazi has this weird smile on his face I don't understand it at all. He pulled me closer and just untied my robe. Him:'rules are off for now Rori you said I should

come back home and I'd get you" Me:"I was high and drunk when I said that" Him:"so you didn't miss me?" Me:"just a little bit like tiny bit" Him:"how tiny?" Me:"sand granule tiny" Him:"that's enough for me...." He pulled me to him . Him:"seat here"

Me:"should we be doing this with your friends and mine downstairs?" Him:"it's our house we can do whatever we want" I nod and just sat on his lap facing him. Me:"but your hand is hurt and I still don't know where you were or what hurt you" Him:"tiny details that don't matter" Me:"okay then" He kissed my neck Him:"for someone who doesn't care you are very worried about me" Me:"we live together Lwazi" Him:"I see" He pushed the robe off my shoulder and started kissing it going up my neck. Me:"Lwazi?" Him:"mmh" he hummed Me:"can you be more gentle please" Him:"mmh" He held on my cheek, he brushed his lips against mine he started

pulling on my lower lip but why though. I won't dispute that felt good he started sucking on it slowly he stopped and just pecked my lips
Him:"smoke suits you hey... But I'm not saying you should smoke" Me:"I won't.." I was slowly unbuttoning his shirt staring into his eyes they seem so small compared to mine. He was busy smiling so I just leaned in and kissed him he responded flipping me over on the bed he groaned I'm guessing from pain he was busy rubbing my thighs I fixed myself up a bit and held on to his face he pulled away from the kiss and he was busy breathing heavily as he continued pecking my lips. Him:"do you want a baby?" Me:"huh?" Him:"let's make a baby"
Me:"no are you mad? We shouldn't be doing this in the first place" Him:"why not?" Me:" I don't want a baby Lwazi" Him:"okay then" He just took off his shirt and reveled the bandage from his shoulder to his mid bicep what happened though I know asking will be a waste of my

breath so yeah I just welcomed him back to my lips as he attacked the upper lip with his hand rubbing me above my undies he just pushed the bikin aside and started rubbing my clit I just held on his face tighter he went deeper making me curl my toes and arch my back. Him:"you okay?" I nod Him:"let me take this off" I lifted myself up and he unhook my bra and then he went to pull down my undies, he unbuttoned his trousers and took them off leaving his boxers God help us all. Him:"you still in pain?" I shook my head , he nod and just pushed my legs further apart getting in between them. He kissed my tummy and went down on me kissing my inner thigh, he parted my folds and just started licking me I gasped and arched my back he continued going deeper on me making me to scream out his name even louder I'm sure the others downstairs heard me whatever it's my house I don't care I reached orgasm with my legs feeling numb as can be I came and he just

licked me clean he came up to me. Him:"why are you sweating?" Me:"I was jogging" Him:"why did I even ask though?" Me:"cause you are stupid now that we all know" He pecked my lips and just took off his shorts and came to kiss me i felt him try to enter me and shit it hurt i thought it wouldn't hurt anymore but now it hurts still this time I was even crying i could feel them flowing like crazy, he broke the kiss and just stared at me. Him:"am I hurting you?" I nod Him:"okay relax and I won't hurt you" He tried to hold me with his left hand then I'm sure the pain hit and he stopped fuck my screaming was on another level I'm sure the others heard me the pain didn't last for long but with Lwazi's left hand it wasn't the same story but nigga never gave up yoh #claponce . Him:"fuck" Me:"let me clean that up Lwazi you are seriously bleeding" He was laying on his back holding on to the left hand. Me:"can I?" He looked at me and slowly nod so I put on my robe and just

walked into my end suite I saw a first aid kit in here somewhere. Me:"Lwazi take that one off" I shouted from the bathroom as I went through the cabinets and I found the small first aid kit I washed my hands first and then went to him to find him sleeping the same way I left him.

Me:"really? I said take the bandage off" Him:"I freaking can't" Me:"so why are you shouting at me now? Come let me help you up so will you tell me what happened?" Him:"damn" Me:"sorry umh sit in between my legs" Him:'do you have any expertise when it comes to this?" Me:"let me see, of course not I'm just curious to what hurt you" He tried to stand up but I pinched the arm and that made him sit down. Me:'so what happened? Was there a shoot out at the hotels or club?" He cleared his throat Him:"so how was your week without me?" Me:"mxm....wait Lwazi this is.... Fuck this is a bullet wound what were you doing with guns? And the scars too what have you gotten me into" Him:"it's nothing okay

just a misunderstanding" Me:"and they shot you and from the looks of things twice one grazed you exactly what were you doing?" Him:"ouch are you cleaning me or killing me?" Me:"both now tell me the truth" Him:"it's best you don't know" I pressed hard on the wound. Him:"Rori maan" Me:"what are you hiding Lwazi I mean for an entire week you disappear and now two bullet wounds? Is this what you meant when you said you'll kill my family? Did you mean it?" Him:"no come on I'd never do that Rori this is just a stupid deal went wrong" Me:"what deal? what's with the tight security around the house?" Him:"come on that's just for safety" Me:"safety from what?" I shouted Him:"Rori calm down please..." Me:"mxm lift your hand slowly" Him:"Rori I'd never put you in danger i brought you here remember? So I'll protect you" Me:"protect me from what? When I lived with my granny I never wanted protection I'd protect myself not from bullets" Him:"this house is not

like any other houses Rori that's why I bought it for you" Me:"so you saying a high wall with electrodes will protect me from a bullet?"

Him:"the walls and Windows are sound and bullet proofed" Me:"hehehe claponce Rorisho

Mphahlele-Mkhize haibo yoh hands down Lwazi Andrew Mkhize so I'm actually in high

maximum security prison? From guards, drivers and unruly alarms now to Bullet and sound

proofed walls and windows? Haii I have seen it all" Him:"come on we....." Me:"haii move I'm

done" Him:"let's talk about it" Me:'talk to the hand brother cause I'm not listening nkosi yami

move" Him:"why don't you want to listen?"

Me:"please get out of my room I'd like to shower and change the sheets" Him:"is it so

wrong for me to want to protect my wife?"

Me:"you know what Lwazi this getting attached stuff shouldn't be happening at all so yeah let's go back to just being an arrangement that was

much better" Him:"you don't mean that?"

Me:'wanna bet? Go take a shower and change please just don't get that bandage wet"

Him:"Rori what do you want me to say? That I kill people? What did you expect? I'm not a saint"

Me:"who said I want a saint? Mxm just go please"

He stood up and just came to me, he cupped my face and made me look up at him he pecked my lips.

Him:"I just can't tell you this it's huge Rori bigger than me...listen there is something I want you to do for me"

Me:"what?"

Him:"I want you to sign a contract let's call it a umh a deal sealing contract that this house is yours for as long as you are my wife and I'll look after you financially no matter what"

Me:"really? You want me to be signing contracts? Haven't I done enough?"

Him:"you have but this is the last step"

Me:"mxm fine where is the contract?"

Him:"I'll bring it with me later" I nod

Me:"cool Lwazi rules are on and they are staying this time"

Him:"if that's what you want but I never planned to put your life in danger I'd never do

that not in this life time" Me:"then what are you doing in the dark?" Him:"I'm going to take a shower" Me:"enjoy your shower hope you don't slip and fall and crack a nut" He kissed my cheek and walked out, I just sank to the floor and took off the gloves I was wearing what is he hiding from me though but on the other hand the sex was good actually it was more than good it was unbelievable even with one hand he still knows his stuff oh goodness me what am I saying. "What happened" I lifted up my head and the girls were at my door.

Me:'ngempela? Ngempela? Like you just burst in like this is the Gautrain station? Uh uh guys no this is not on for real" Una:"are you okay?"

Me:"yeah why?" Una:"uh the blood on your bed, did he..." Me:"hail guys that's not on at all please get out I'm fine now this is my room so wait for me outside" Kuli:"what did he do to you friend? Did he hurt you?" Me:"guys just...." "Rori I..."

Lwazi stood at the door topless but he was

holding a shirt in hand. Me:"guys get out...."

They were just staring.

Me:"I said get

out guys" Una:"oh yeah umh see you later" They

walked towards the door and Lwazi just moved

not even a single tooth showing he was pale. So

I know he ain't interested in them, I stood up

and just went to him. Me:"what's wrong?"

Him:"umh the bandage is too tight so fix it but

don't put your anger into it" I rolled my eyes

Me:"seat down" Him:"can I say I'm sorry?"

Me:"I'm not angry so you don't need to" I got on

the bed and just knelt behind him I loosened up

the bandage. Me:"is it okay now" Him:"mmh

listen your friends should bounce as in today

and no more sleep overs" Me:"okay I'll tell them"

He put on his shirt I just sat on the bed and just

stared at him I mean he's from a rich family

what more does he want, he smiled and just

leaned over to kiss me. Him:"I'll be fine and I'll

make sure you are fine too" Me:"I don't care if

they shoot your brains out" He chuckled

Him:"come here" I folded my arms and just shook my head. Him:"one last hug please" He sulked Me:"mxm you look ugly" Him:"hug me and I'll look handsome" I got on my knees and he bend over and we hugged he smelt so nice so heavenly too but he's not telling me everything I should know he slowly broke the hug and decided to attack my lips with a kiss he pulled away and just kissed my forehead. Him:"I'll be back later and your friends should be gone by then" I nod He walked out I got off the bed and took the bloody sheets to the bathroom I just put them in the laundry basket I'm lazy I put clean sheets and just packed away the first aid now all I need is a shower I went to take a quick shower and I went to put on my body lotion and decided to wear my shorts and sports bra I just took my phone and called Lwazi which he quickly picked up. Me:"umh if you don't mind please pass by the mall and buy me a sketch book and some pencils and

crayons even wax crayons" Him:"and you want people to think I'm a kid?" Me:"I said if you can"
Him:"fine one sketch book or?" Me:"two will be fine and can you get me some paint" Him:"hail maan no chose one thing" Me:"just buy those things I asked for" Him:"okay but I'll be back late" Me:"just bring me what I ordered"
Him:"cool then bye" Me:"and a tub of chocolate ice cream and..." Him:"just text me everything you need okay" Me:"okay cool" I hung up and just texted him even some morning after pills which this time I'll take tomorrow morning yoh the guy who said was busy called me.
Me:"what?" Him:"what's with the pills Rori?" Me:"just a precaution" Him:"wagafa kao bona[you are crazy I see] I better not find out about any pills you hear me I'll kill you" Me:"but Lwazi I don't want to be pregnant I still have to plan my future"_ Him:"well I'm not going to buy any of those stupid pills" Me:'you are stupid nxa" Him:"listen to me.... If I see any pill

package at that house I'll kill you" Me:"screw you Lwazi I know the pharmacy I'll buy them myself" Him:"have fun" I just hung up angry as hell how dare he think that he can control me I mean this is my body my body hi it's mine and it's my womb yeah sure you did the work but this is my body nxa and now I have to throw my friends out or he'll have a fit when he gets back I found them watching TV so I just threw myself on the couch. Me:'guys here is the deal y'all will have to move out hey Lwazi is having his mid life crisis so he'll have a fit" Una:"so what happened up there?" Me:"nothing really that was Lwazi's blood" Una:"what happened?" Me:"that's for me to know guys so please umh...so please he's not in a good mood and please take the morning after pill box with you asemblief" Kuli:"yoh friend let's go pack before they get the dogs to chase us out" Me:"yoh hallelujah really Kuli? You know what stay but if Lwazi finds you here that's your problem not

mine, yoh so much for trying to warn people this is what I tried to do for Leroy but no you guys know better you want to make an enemy of Lwazi halala enjoy it" I went to my kitchen and just poured myself some juice I went back to the living room and sat down on the one seater couch. Una:"friend see you when we go to fetch our results" Me:"we are not in matric yet friend" Una:"work with me here and please come help me pack" Me:"with outmost pleasure come let's go" Una:"Kuli let's go" Kuli:"I'm still watching TV" Me:"the driver can't go back and forth he won't agree" Kuli:"mxm" Wow anyway I went to help Unathi pack the only logical person in this house and when we were done we found Kuli packed too I just called the driver for them and he went to load their bags so I shared a hug with Una but Kuli just gave me half a hug. Whatever I went back inside and just switched on the alarms and then it's TV time

[03/08, 16:04] Mk: My handsome monster-

Our holy matrimony . . . EPISODE 19* . . .
RORI * . . . You know living in this big house
alone is just boring this side Lwazi is always
busy I was watching some cartoons and my
phone rang and it was my granny problem I
haven't seen her ever since I moved here and
that kills me yazi. Me:"my love" Her:"my child
when are you coming to visit me? I miss you"
Me:"I'll be there in a few don't worry I'm bored
anyway" Her:"okay please come we have to talk"
Me:"I hope it's not about those people okay I
don't want to" Her:"please come" Me:"okay fine
I'll be there very soon" Her:"thank you my child"
Me:"mmmh" She hung up and I was now
doubting going to the house I don't want to talk
to those people but on the other hand I can't
disappoint my granny so I just went upstairs to
change I wore a long blue and red flannel
shirt and red ankle high boot heel I combed my
afro and just took the Versace bag from my
mother in law it was a wedding gift along with

two lingerie sets so yeah she expects me to give it to him like crazy halala he wishes that I will hey I took my phone and walked out I called my driver and he drove me to my grannies house and nowadays its enough for the entire family everyone has their own room we arrived outside the house and even the spaza is somewhat bigger now the car drove in the yard and he came to open the door for me I got out and went to knock on the front door Lord help me not kill a man with my heel I walked into the house and I found everyone seated and by everyone I mean even my so called parents. Me:"hello" Tshepi:"hello to you too" I walked over to grandma and kissed her cheek. Me:"how are you granny" Gogo:"I'm okay and you?" Winter:"haa this one is fine look at her she's even glowing" Me:"you do understand that's just crazy talk neh anyway why am I here?" Gogo:"cause I missed you" Me:"okay where are the twins?" Gogo:"they went to their friends"

Me:"ahh I'll see them when we go for the Christmas service next week neh.." Winter:"you still want to go to church?" Me:"why wouldn't I? Just because I'm married doesn't mean anything" Gogo:"so your husband will be there?" Me:"I doubt it he'll likely be busy or with his friends" Gogo:"but you'll come" Me:"you know I never miss a Christmas service so I'll try to be there" Woman:"so how is married life treating you Palesa?" you got to be kidding me like really. Me:"you guys gotta see my house Tshepi you'll love it like there is a jacuzzi and a pool" Tshepi:"that's sound like a joll" Me:"believe me it is but high security I can't even smoke" Winter:" he is saving your lungs" Me:"got an extra pair" Woman:"Palesa you haven't spoken to us since you got here what's wrong?" I looked at her and just rolled my eyes. Me:"guys I'm starving... What's for lunch today gogo" Gogo:"oh your mother cooked some..." Me:"just lost my appetite at the word mother eww what's

that?" Gogo:"Rorisho please" Me:"I don't have such a thing as a mother okay not even a father and I'm surprised why they are busy calling me Palesa who the hell is that?" Woman:"ain't you happy that I'm here?" Me:"happy? You want me to be happy to see you two? You ruined my childhood, our childhood do you know what that's like? Relying on grandma only for everything" Man:"we were going to fetch you three" Me:"oh yeah tomorrow that's something I was told tomorrow" Woman:'we came but you had moved already" Me:'don't lie please we moved from Witbank when granddad died and I was six so when were you coming? When grandma died or when we all died?" Tshepi:"yeah they don't even know what we went through when arrived here we all had to grow up" Me:"so fetch us please do it" Woman:"watch how you talk to us" Me:"or what? What will you do huh? Beat me? Hehe I'd like to see you try" Woman:"Palesa don't..." Me:"I'm not

Palesa for the last freaking time stop calling me that stop it" Gogo:"calm down my child just listen to them please" Me:"to what gogo? They left all of us at a very young age I wasn't even one when they left now 18 years later she has the audacity to tell me to watch how I talk to her? Who is she huh who is she in my life?"

Gogo:"girls please just listen to them just listen"

WWinter:"Gogo Rori is right they don't have a say in our lives we made ourselves and to show that we know we wouldn't be here without you we'd do anything to make you happy gogo but not them" Tshepi and I nod. Man:"but we

understand that you angry and that's why we came back to apologies" Tshepi:"where do you know Leroy from?" Man:"who is that?" Me:"the boy you came with at my wedding" Woman:"he helped us find you" Me:"should have know...you know what gogo i don't like seeing you cry so I think it's best I just leave cause what you want to happen it won't really" Woman:'we are here

for you" Me:"crawl back to the hole you crawled out from I ain't interested so I'd suggest you pack and leave" [Phone rings] I checked the caller and it was Lwazi I picked up.

Me:"yebo" Him:"where are you?" Me:"my grannies why?" Him:"well you'll find your things in your room" Me:"you are at the house?"

Him:"yeah and guess what I'm starving"

Me:"ain't we all take out the chicken for me please I'll be there in a jiffy" Him:"I'm already at the door" Me:"close the door and go back to the kitchen and take out the chicken asemblief"

Him:"ehh futsek" Me:"fine go I'll emprovise when I get there" Him:"and we have to talk when I get back" Me:"I'll be sleeping Lwazi and don't

wake me up either" Him:"we'll see and greet your granny" Me:"will do" I hung up and just

stared at my grinning sisters. Me:"what's with you two?" Tshepi:" you are smiling for a guy whose not Leroy what does he do to you"

Me:" ehh Gogo I have to go he's complaining

about hunger" Gogo:"you should feed him or else he'll go somewhere else" Me:"he's used to eating at a restaurant" Tshepi:"gogo is not talking about that type of hunger" Me:"what is she....oh ahh mara gogo that's not the hunger I'm talking about though" Gogo:"so you feed him" We burst out laughing Me:"Bab'Mdluli has some explaining to do seriously" Tshepi:"ehh you also know that Bab'Mdluli has the hots for gogo" Me:"it's obvious I mean one egg nkosi yami..." Gogo:" I'm trying to help you save your marriage" Me:"gogo Lwazi is always traveling and I'm good with that" Gogo:"haa I can hear it in your speech you are more matured now" woman what are you doing to me though I just looked down and started nibbling on my fingers. Tshepi:"haa she's getting some wena gogo look at her blushing" Me:"I married a Zulu man what do you expect? I'm joking guys umh granny Lwazi says hi" Woman:"when are we..." Winter:"woah

don't kill our vibe please stop" Man:"Winter!" He shouted. Me:"woah don't even try it, you don't have the right to even shout at us so don't please i don't know why you are even here"

Tshepi:"now back to you Rori" Me:"what about me?" Tshepi:"your marriage to the Zulu man how is it?" Me:"umh I don't know hey I guess its fine" Gogo:"tell us" Me:"haa gogo you are naughty these days" Winter:" that's because you left us" Me:"I know hey but look at us we are not fighting" Gogo:"and I love such moments" Me:"well let me go before I change the mood" Tshepi:"I'm telling you gogo soon she'll be walking with her back bent" Me;"you wish I'm not going to be a mom any time soon"

Gogo:"you are not getting any younger" Me:"ahh Janet Jackson had her child at 50 and I'm still 18 I'll do just fine I can catch up" Winter:"I wish you the best hey" Me:"and you'll have to adopt

" Woman:"what do you mean adopt? She'll have her own kids" Me:"why don't you

shut up? Nxa don't talk about things you don't know please before you seriously bore us"

Gogo:"Rorisho please don't" Me:"no gogo how insensitive can she be?" Gogo:"she doesn't know" Us:"they must shut up" We were boiling we know there is something called giving birth but Winter will never have the chance she can't have kids and due to abuse her boyfriend found out that she was pregnant and just took a spree in beating her till he felt good with himself and in that he damaged her for the good she can't have kids anymore and that hurts us all at home especially us the sisters and she says that.

Tshepi:"Gogo they should leave please we don't want them here" Gogo:"I can't chase my child away" Me:"she left you without even looking back gogo" Gogo:"but she left me with three naughty girls who made me happy" Winter:"they left us gogo we went through a lot you went through a lot all on your own now that we are all grown they come back no" Gogo:"but they came

back" Me:"I'm really sorry gogo but if these two are still here there will be no peace in this house especially from me" I kissed her cheek and took my handbag and stood up. Me:"I'll see you guys some other time I have to cook for my husband" Tshepi:"bye and next time please leave the bag" Me:"yoh Lwazi's mother would kill me haa Versace sister Versace" Winter:"I want the boots" Me:"ehh gogo wena what do you want?" Gogo:"your hair" Me:"ehh see you guys before I leave here naked and without dignity" I waved and just walked out this is my family they want all my clothes even before I married Lwazi it was like this Tshepi did the same thing she'd take my clothes all the time hey but I got used to it by now, I got inside the car and the driver drove out upon arrival at the house my mother in law called so I quickly answered. Me:'hello ma" Her:"hello dear how are you?" Me:"I'm good and you ma" Her:"I'm good so where is my son?" Me:"I don't know hey I just got back home

I didn't find him here" Her:"oh so you leave your husband all alone? You are still newly weds you should be inseparable" Me:"yoh we decided to go on with life he's even busy at work"

Her:"young lady I didn't buy you lingerie for nothing use it and show him your body he'll forget about what" this woman though

why me. Me:"I will ma" Her:"tonight show him tonight" Me:" okay ma I'll have to cook first

he'll be back very soon" Her:"he likes chicken salad" Me:" I'll remember that ma, thank you"

Her:"good and remember to take Care of him and he'll take care of you" Me:"okay I'll try"

Her:"Rori i know you as my daughter in law and make sure it stays that way fight for him if you have to scratch and pull on hairs just to keep him understand me? Fight" Me:"but ma he hates it when I fight" Her:"he doesn't have to know

just beat her and go and act like a Lady in front of him I do that all the time" Me:" ma I'll do

such I promise I'll fight" Her:" I know my son is a

loose pants so you'll have to deal with him"

Me:"I'll super glue his pants on" She chuckled

Her:"it might work listen my dear I'll call you another time and don't forget lingerie tonight"

Me:"yes mam take care" Her:"same to you" She

hung up leaving me to laugh at such a mother in law I mean what is she telling me though

anyway I went about my wifely duties and

cooked for my crazy husband so i know where

he gets his craziness damn his father is crazy

and also his mother so it's a 100% now anyway

I cooked for him and also googled how to make

a chicken salad hey she told me okay after

cooking I decided to go and take a shower after

I got out and put on my body lotion and just put

on some shorts and a blue Nike jersey and my

slippers and made my hair into clean buns after

I went back downstairs when Lwazi walked in.

Him:"look at my wife" Me:"shut up please"

Him:"so why the smile?" Me:"just got a call from

your mother it made my day" Him:"and what did

you two talk about?" Me:"forget that come and eat I'll tell you" Him:"where you gossiping?" Me:"yeah pretty much" Him:"about what?" Me:"I made you some chicken salad see come" He slowly walked towards me and I just took his hand to the kitchen Me:"seat down and eat" Him:"okay then" I dished up for him then for me the whole time we ate he was busy staring at me. After our food I took everything and put them in the sink and started washing them Him:"so what's for dessert?" Me:"dude i just gave you dessert" Him:"i mean dessert" Me:"why do I even entertain you though? Mxm" Him:"you can't get enough of my voice" Me:"keep telling yourself that ..you know today all the ladies were after me" Him:"who?" Me:"my gran,sisters and your mother" Him:"what did they want from you?" Me:"well my family said that I was starving you...am I starving you?" Him:"yep a whole lot" Me:"you such an ass" He shrug Him:"so what did my mother want?"

Me:"yoh she was telling me that I should wear that lingerie she bought for me tonight to give it to you any how you want" Him:"I love my mom God I love that old woman.. So where is the lingerie?" I just took a pillow and threw it at him and he was laughing. Him:"I want to see you in some lingerie so that I can drool even harder" Me:"shut up or I'll kill you" him:"see you are starving me" Me:"you such an idiot... Did you clean your wound again?" Him:"been busy today but it's fine" Me:"you have to clean it fetch the first aid kit" Him:"you fetch it" Me:"I mean that one above the TV you lazy ass" Him:"oh this one" Me:"mxm come sit here" Him:"there as in there in between your legs there" He wiggled his eyebrows Me:"this idiot of a husband come on please" He smiled and just sat down in between my legs and I helped him take off his shirt and then the bandage. Me:"so bullets for who and what and why?" Him:"I like your thighs" Me:"I like them too" Him:"I could just kiss them all

over" Me;"I could kiss them too" Him:"and come all over them" Me:"I'll do that don't worry"
Him:"how will you that?" Me:"the same way you'll do it" Him:"how is that?" Me:" the same way as you...so please work with me here lift your hand for me" Him:"touch me there again" I just slapped the back of his head. Him:"ouch"
Me:"I said do it" Him:"so how is it doctor?"
Me:"you'll die an idiot" I sterilized the wound and put on the clean bandage. Me:"get up I'm done"
Him:"I like it here more comfy and warm"
Me:"put on your shirt then" Him:"i like feeling your skin so I'll be fine" Me:"okay understood now stop flapping my legs like wings" Him:"so did you find your parents at the house" Me:"they were there and as always things were upside down" him:"what did you do now?" Me:"nothing those people don't know us at all Lwazi they were busy flaunting around like they know us, they were insensitive towards Winter and they kept on calling me Palesa" Him:"I like Palesa"

Me:"screw you Lwazi those people should go back where they were we don't need them finish and klaar" Him:"they are here to make amends"
Me:"but that won't change anything Winter still won't be able to have kids, Tshepi and I will still be at logger heads" Him:"what happened to Winter?" Me:"an abusive boyfriend that son of a bitch told my sister he loved her and then when push came to shove he beat her like there is no tomorrow" Him:"I didn't know I'm sorry" Me:"and they had the guts to say that she can't adopt she has to give birth what the hell" Him:"they didn't know" I just poked his head Me:"whose side are you on? The person you busy resting your head on her thighs or those people?"
Him:"I'm on your side but..." Me:"no buts"
Him:"okay so what should I do to help?" Me:"kill them" Him:"woah I ain't doing that forget that"
Me:"then why ask? What does this tattoo mean?" Him:"which one?" Me:"this one written in Chinese" Him:"that's my name i got it the time

I was in China" Me:"and this one?" Him:"and which one?" Me:"a bull red eyed and with a chain or something" Him:"that has no meaning I just drew them" Me:"oh so you've been to China?" Him:"mmh now please stop touching me like that you are seriously making me horny" Me:"o-kay get out of my legs" Him:"no but don't move your hands up and down like that" Me:"I'm just reading these Tattoos so sue me" Him:"do it without the fingers please" Me:"okay so how was your day?" Him:"it was okay but I kept on thinking about our fight today" Me:"which one?" Him:"the pills" Me:"I thought you were talking about the wounds cause that's what's in my mind" Him:"no Rori I don't understand why you'd want to take such pills" Me:"it's not like I'm killing myself" Him:"but you are also killing something" Me:"Lwazi there is nothing in here just my intestines" Him:"you are not sure" Me:"are you ready to be a father Lwazi? Like hands on father nappy changing, late nights

bottle feeding and everything like it"

Him:"ye...yeah" Me:"don't think so and Lord knows I ain't ready to be breastfeeding or even having sleepless nights plus I still have school"

Him:"but Rori it'll be fun" Me:"I don't want to go to school with a big belly that's creepy Lwazi so please not now and what's with this?"

Him:"what?" Me:"this family talk what's going on? I thought I was just coming here to act like the wife and nothing more" Him:"you.... Rori that's not the point we can't be married and not have kids" Me:"its not a marathon okay" Him:"just saying how I feel" Me:"understandable" Him:"so you understand why I'm doing this?" Me:"trying to trap me so that I don't leave but I think you have already and big time" Him:"I'm not trying that seriously I can't" Me:"good now let's not go there Lwazi please no babies just until I know what I'm doing then we can talk" Him:"can I fuck you though" Me:"wow really?" Him:"you are busy rubbing me and I'm in between your legs what

do you expect" Me:"for you to be mature and just live with the fact that there ain't no funny business while you are lying to me" Him:"I said that's for your protection why can't we leave it?" Me:"cause I can't Lwazi I'm scared okay" Him:"I'll sleep with you so you don't be scared" Me:"that's not funny at all" Him:"I'm being serious since you don't believe me when I say no one is going to hurt you except for me" Me:"i see move I'd like to get some water" Him:"seat I'll get it for you" Me:"how lovely get up" He grinned and just kissed my forehead he walked into the kitchen I relaxed a bit anf when I was enjoying my sweet night. "Rori" he roared what did i do now huh. Me:"yes" Him:"what the fuck is this?" He was holding the pill box Me:"where did you get that?" Him:"I asked you a question first I said what the fuck is this?" Me:" I can explain" Him:" start now" He was walking towards me so I quickly stood up and went to the other couch. Me:"that's for last week I

bought those after we had sex Lwazi I..."

Him:"what did I say about these" Me:"last week Lwazi you left remember I... We didn't speak about this and I thought we just concluded that I can take precautions" Him:"come here"

Me:"hell no, uh-uh, no, aint happening" Him:"I'm not playing with you I said come here" Me:"but that's an old box Lwazi old" Him:"I said come here" I shook my head Him:"you know what Rori it's cool... It's fine it's your body not mine"

Me:"Lwazi wait it's not like that.... It's.." He just ran up the stairs come on from hey it's cool to this nxa how did he even find the box though now I have to be apologizing anyway I followed him upstairs and went to his room I knocked and just walked in he was not there so I went to his bathroom and I found him busy playing with water splashing his face. Me:"Lwazi I'm serious that was last week I swear" Him:"I said it's cool" Me:"it's not I can tell from your voice" He looked at me busy wiping his face. Him:"it's fine really"

I held on his face and just pecked his lips.

Me:"I'm not ready to be a mom, and I don't know when I will be" He held my waist Him:"it's fine really" Me:"say it like you mean it then I'll believe you" He just sighed Me:"why do you want a baby so bad?" Him:"I don't want it so bad just that I realized that in life there are no guarantees and I could just die without anything to remind people that I was here" Me:"you shouldn't worry girls will remember you even when you dead they'll still drool on you" Him:'im done with that im married now" I smiled Me:"is it?" Him:"mmh,and she's such a cute tomboy" Me:"you don't say" He pecked my lips Him:"and she looked beautiful in her wedding dress I can still see it" Me:"mmh sounds like you are in love sir so I'll bounce and leave you to dream about your wife" Him:"not so fast now how about you sleep in my room tonight?" Me:"uh no I'll sleep in mine" Him:'then I'll sleep in yours" Me:'but I...want...to sleep alone without you trying to

knock me up" Him:"and...I just want to sleep next to you that's all no funny business"
Me:"you are funny so I am not holding my breath" Him:"so I can come?" Me:"yeah sure but first wear some pj's" Him:"no need" Okay we walked to my room and I changed into my PJs like that lasted cause soon they were flying across the room but why me why huh he's so damn charming to resist

F My handsome monster-Our holy matrimony . . . EPISODE 19* . . RORI * . . .
You know living in this big house alone is just boring this side Lwazi is always busy I was watching some cartoons and my phone rang and it was my granny problem I haven't seen her ever since I moved here and that kills me yazi. Me:"my love" Her:"my child when are you coming to visit me? I miss you" Me:"I'll be there in a few don't worry I'm bored anyway"
Her:"okay please come we have to talk" Me:"I hope it's not about those people okay I don't

want to" Her:"please come" Me:"okay fine I'll be there very soon" Her:"thank you my child"
Me:"mmmh" She hung up and I was now doubting going to the house I don't want to talk to those people but on the other hand I can't disappoint my granny so I just went upstairs to change I wore a long blue and red flannel shirt and red ankle high boot heel I combed my afro and just took the Versace bag from my mother in law it was a wedding gift along with two lingerie sets so yeah she expects me to give it to him like crazy halala he wishes that I will hey I took my phone and walked out I called my driver and he drove me to my grannies house and nowadays its enough for the entire family everyone has their own room we arrived outside the house and even the spaza is somewhat bigger now the car drove in the yard and he came to open the door for me I got out and went to knock on the front door Lord help me not kill a man with my heel I walked into the

house and I found everyone seated and by everyone I mean even my so called parents.

Me:"hello" Tshepi:"hello to you too" I walked over to grandma and kissed her cheek. Me:"how are you granny" Gogo:"I'm okay and you?"

Winter:"haa this one is fine look at her she's even glowing" Me:"you do understand that's just crazy talk neh anyway why am I here?"

Gogo:"cause I missed you" Me:"okay where are the twins?" Gogo:"they went to their friends"

Me:"ahh I'll see them when we go for the Christmas service next week neh.." Winter:"you still want to go to church?" Me:"why wouldn't I? Just because I'm married doesn't mean anything" Gogo:"so your husband will be there?"

Me:"I doubt it he'll likely be busy or with his friends" Gogo:"but you'll come" Me:"you know I never miss a Christmas service so I'll try to be there" Woman:"so how is married life treating you Palesa?" you got to be kidding me like really. Me:"you guys gotta see my house Tshepi

you'll love it like there is a jacuzzi and a pool"

Tshepi:"that's sound like a joll" Me:"believe me it is but high security I can't even smoke"

Winter:" he is saving your lungs" Me:"got an

extra pair" Woman:"Palesa you haven't spoken to us since you got here what's wrong?" I looked at her and just rolled my eyes. Me:"guys I'm starving... What's for lunch today gogo"

Gogo:"oh your mother cooked some..." Me:"just lost my appetite at the word mother eww what's that?" Gogo:"Rorisho please" Me:"I don't have

such a thing as a mother okay not even a father and I'm surprised why they are busy calling me Palesa who the hell is that?" Woman:"ain't you happy that I'm here?" Me:"happy? You want me to be happy to see you two? You ruined my childhood, our childhood do you know what that's like? Relying on grandma only for everything"

Man:"we were going to fetch you

three" Me:"oh yeah tomorrow that's something I

was told tomorrow" Woman:'we came but you

had moved already" Me:'don't lie please we moved from Witbank when granddad died and I was six so when were you coming? When grandma died or when we all died?"

Tshepi:"yeah they don't even know what we went through when arrived here we all had to grow up" Me:"so fetch us please do it"

Woman:"watch how you talk to us" Me:"or what?"

What will you do huh? Beat me? Hehe I'd like to see you try" Woman:"Palesa don't..." Me:"I'm not

Palesa for the last freaking time stop calling me that stop it" Gogo:"calm down my child just

listen to them please" Me:"to what gogo? They left all of us at a very young age I wasn't even

one when they left now 18 years later she has

the audacity to tell me to watch how I talk to her?

Who is she huh who is she in my life?"

Gogo:"girls please just listen to them just listen"

WWinter:"Gogo Rori is right they don't have a say in our lives we made ourselves and to show

that we know we wouldn't be here without you

we'd do anything to make you happy gogo but not them" Tshepi and I nod. Man:"but we understand that you angry and that's why we came back to apologies" Tshepi:"where do you know Leroy from?" Man:"who is that?" Me:"the boy you came with at my wedding" Woman:"he helped us find you" Me:"should have know...you know what gogo i don't like seeing you cry so I think it's best I just leave cause what you want to happen it won't really" Woman:'we are here for you" Me:"crawl back to the hole you crawled out from I ain't interested so I'd suggest you pack and leave" [Phone rings] I checked the caller and it was Lwazi I picked up. Me:"yebo" Him:"where are you?" Me:"my grannies why?" Him:"well you'll find your things in your room" Me:"you are at the house?" Him:"yeah and guess what I'm starving" Me:"ain't we all take out the chicken for me please I'll be there in a jiffy" Him:"I'm already at the door" Me:"close the door and go back to the

kitchen and take out the chicken asemblief"
Him:"ehh futsek" Me:"fine go I'll emprovise
when I get there" Him:'and we have to talk when
I get back" Me:"I'll be sleeping Lwazi and don't
wake me up either" Him:"we'll see and greet
your granny" Me:"will do" I hung up and just
stared at my grinning sisters. Me:"what's with
you two?" Tshepi:" you are smiling for a guy
whose not Leroy what does he do to you"
Me:" ehh Gogo I have to go he's complaining
about hunger" Gogo:"you should feed him or
else he'll go somewhere else" Me:"he's used to
eating at a restaurant" Tshepi:"gogo is not
talking about that type of hunger" Me:"what is
she....oh ahh mara gogo that's not the
hunger I'm talking about though" Gogo:"so you
feed him" We burst out laughing Me:"Bab'Mdluli
has some explaining to do seriously"
Tshepi:"ehh you also know that Bab'Mdluli has
the hots for gogo" Me:"it's obvious I mean one
egg nkosi yami..." Gogo:" I'm trying to help

you save your marriage" Me:"gogo Lwazi is always traveling and I'm good with that"
Gogo:"haa I can hear it in your speech you are more matured now" woman what are you doing to me though I just looked down and started nibbling on my fingers. Tshepi:"haa she's getting some wena gogo look at her blushing" Me:"I married a Zulu man what do you expect? I'm joking guys umh granny Lwazi says hi" Woman:"when are we..." Winter:"woah don't kill our vibe please stop" Man:"Winter!" He shouted. Me:"woah don't even try it, you don't have the right to even shout at us so don't please i don't know why you are even here"
Tshepi:"now back to you Rori" Me:"what about me?" Tshepi:"your marriage to the Zulu man how is it?" Me:"umh I don't know hey I guess its fine" Gogo:"tell us" Me:"haa gogo you are naughty these days" Winter:" that's because you left us" Me:"I know hey but look at us we are not fighting" Gogo:"and I love such

moments" Me:"well let me go before I change the mood" Tshepi:"I'm telling you gogo soon she'll be walking with her back bent" Me;"you wish I'm not going to be a mom any time soon" Gogo:"you are not getting any younger" Me:"ahh Janet Jackson had her child at 50 and I'm still 18 I'll do just fine I can catch up" Winter:"I wish you the best hey" Me:"and you'll have to adopt " Woman:"what do you mean adopt? She'll have her own kids" Me:"why don't you shut up? Nxa don't talk about things you don't know please before you seriously bore us" Gogo:"Rorisho please don't" Me:"no gogo how insensitive can she be?" Gogo:"she doesn't know" Us:"they must shut up" We were boiling we know there is something called giving birth but Winter will never have the chance she can't have kids and due to abuse her boyfriend found out that she was pregnant and just took a spree in beating her till he felt good with himself and in that he damaged her for the good she can't

have kids anymore and that hurts us all at home especially us the sisters and she says that.

Tshepi:"Gogo they should leave please we don't want them here" Gogo:"I can't chase my child

away" Me:"she left you without even looking back gogo" Gogo:"but she left me with three

naughty girls who made me happy" Winter:"they left us gogo we went through a lot you went

through a lot all on your own now that we are all grown they come back no" Gogo:"but they came

back" Me:"I'm really sorry gogo but if these two are still here there will be no peace in this house

especially from me" I kissed her cheek and took my handbag and stood up. Me:"I'll see you guys

some other time I have to cook for my husband" Tshepi:"bye and next time please leave the bag"

Me:"yoh Lwazi's mother would kill me haa

Versace sister Versace" Winter:"I want the

boots" Me:"ehh gogo wena what do you want?"

Gogo:"your hair" Me:"ehh see you guys before I

leave here naked and without dignity" I waved

and just walked out this is my family they want all my clothes even before I married Lwazi it was like this Tshepi did the same thing she'd take my clothes all the time hey but I got used to it by now, I got inside the car and the driver drove out upon arrival at the house my mother in law called so I quickly answered. Me:'hello ma" Her:"hello dear how are you?" Me:"I'm good and you ma" Her:"I'm good so where is my son?" Me:"I don't know hey I just got back home I didn't find him here" Her:"oh so you leave your husband all alone? You are still newly weds you should be inseparable" Me:"yoh we decided to go on with life he's even busy at work" Her:"young lady I didn't buy you lingerie for nothing use it and show him your body he'll forget about what" this woman though why me. Me:"I will ma" Her:"tonight show him tonight" Me:" okay ma I'll have to cook first he'll be back very soon" Her:"he likes chicken salad" Me:" I'll remember that ma, thank you"

Her:"good and remember to take Care of him and he'll take care of you" Me:"okay I'll try"

Her:"Rori i know you as my daughter in law and make sure it stays that way fight for him if you have to scratch and pull on hairs just to keep him understand me? Fight" Me:"but ma he hates it when I fight"

Her:"he doesn't have to know just beat her and go and act like a Lady in front of him I do that all the time" Me:" ma I'll do such I promise I'll fight"

Her:" I know my son is a loose pants so you'll have to deal with him"

Me:"I'll super glue his pants on" She chuckled

Her:"it might work listen my dear I'll call you another time and don't forget lingerie tonight"

Me:"yes mam take care" Her:"same to you" She

hung up leaving me to laugh at such a mother in law I mean what is she telling me though

anyway I went about my wifely duties and cooked for my crazy husband so i know where he gets his craziness damn his father is crazy and also his mother so it's a 100% now anyway

I cooked for him and also googled how to make a chicken salad hey she told me okay after cooking I decided to go and take a shower after I got out and put on my body lotion and just put on some shorts and a blue Nike jersey and my slippers and made my hair into clean buns after I went back downstairs when Lwazi walked in.

Him:"look at my wife" Me:"shut up please"

Him:"so why the smile?" Me:"just got a call from your mother it made my day" Him:"and what did you two talk about?" Me:"forget that come and eat I'll tell you" Him:"where you gossiping?"

Me:"yeah pretty much" Him:"about what?" Me:"I made you some chicken salad see come" He slowly walked towards me and I just took his hand to the kitchen Me:"seat down and eat"

Him:"okay then" I dished up for him then for me the whole time we ate he was busy staring at me. After our food I took everything and put them in the sink and started washing them

Him:"so what's for dessert?" Me:"dude i just

gave you dessert" Him:"i mean dessert"

Me:"why do I even entertain you though? Mxm"

Him:"you can't get enough of my voice"

Me:"keep telling yourself that ..you know today all the ladies were after me" Him:"who?" Me:"my

gran,sisters and your mother" Him:"what did they want from you?" Me:"well my family said that I was starving you...am I starving you?"

Him:"yep a whole lot" Me:"you such an ass" He shrug Him:"so what did my mother want?"

Me:"yoh she was telling me that I should wear that lingerie she bought for me tonight to give it

to you any how you want" Him:"I love my mom God I love that old woman.. So where is the

lingerie?" I just took a pillow and threw it at him and he was laughing. Him:"I want to see you in

some lingerie so that I can drool even harder"

Me:"shut up or I'll kill you" him:"see you are starving me" Me:"you such an idiot... Did you

clean your wound again?" Him:"been busy today but it's fine" Me:"you have to clean it fetch the

first aid kit" Him:"you fetch it" Me:"I mean that one above the TV you lazy ass" Him:"oh this one" Me:"mxm come sit here" Him:"there as in there in between your legs there" He wiggled his eyebrows Me:"this idiot of a husband come on please" He smiled and just sat down in between my legs and I helped him take off his shirt and then the bandage. Me:"so bullets for who and what and why?" Him:"I like your thighs" Me:"I like them too" Him:"I could just kiss them all over" Me;"I could kiss them too" Him:"and come all over them" Me:"I'll do that don't worry" Him:"how will you that?" Me:"the same way you'll do it" Him:"how is that?" Me:" the same way as you...so please work with me here lift your hand for me" Him:"touch me there again" I just slapped the back of his head. Him:"ouch" Me:"I said do it" Him:"so how is it doctor?" Me:"you'll die an idiot" I sterilized the wound and put on the clean bandage. Me:"get up I'm done" Him:"I like it here more comfy and warm"

Me:"put on your shirt then" Him:"i like feeling your skin so I'll be fine" Me:"okay understood now stop flapping my legs like wings" Him:"so did you find your parents at the house" Me:"they were there and as always things were upside down" him:"what did you do now?" Me:"nothing those people don't know us at all Lwazi they were busy flaunting around like they know us, they were insensitive towards Winter and they kept on calling me Palesa" Him:"I like Palesa" Me:"screw you Lwazi those people should go back where they were we don't need them finish and klaar" Him:"they are here to make amends" Me:"but that won't change anything Winter still won't be able to have kids, Tshepi and I will still be at logger heads" Him:"what happened to Winter?" Me:"an abusive boyfriend that son of a bitch told my sister he loved her and then when push came to shove he beat her like there is no tomorrow" Him:"I didn't know I'm sorry" Me:"and they had the guts to say that she can't adopt

she has to give birth what the hell" Him:"they didn't know" I just poked his head Me:"whose side are you on? The person you busy resting your head on her thighs or those people?" Him:"I'm on your side but..." Me:"no buts" Him:"okay so what should I do to help?" Me:"kill them" Him:"woah I ain't doing that forget that" Me:"then why ask? What does this tattoo mean?" Him:"which one?" Me:"this one written in Chinese" Him:"that's my name i got it the time I was in China" Me:"and this one?" Him:"and which one?" Me:"a bull red eyed and with a chain or something" Him:"that has no meaning I just drew them" Me:"oh so you've been to China?" Him:"mmh now please stop touching me like that you are seriously making me horny" Me:"o-kay get out of my legs" Him:"no but don't move your hands up and down like that" Me:"I'm just reading these Tattoos so sue me" Him:"do it without the fingers please" Me:"okay so how was your day?" Him:"it was okay but I kept on

thinking about our fight today" Me:"which one?"

Him:"the pills" Me:"I thought you were talking

about the wounds cause that's what's in my

mind" Him:"no Rori I don't understand why you'd

want to take such pills" Me:'it's not like I'm

killing myself" Him:"but you are also killing

something" Me:"Lwazi there is nothing in here

just my intestines" Him:"you are not sure"

Me:"are you ready to be a father Lwazi? Like

hands on father nappy changing, late nights

bottle feeding and everything like it"

Him:"ye...yeah" Me:"don't think so and Lord

knows I ain't ready to be breastfeeding or even

having sleepless nights plus I still have school"

Him:"but Rori it'll be fun" Me:"I don't want to go

to school with a big belly that's creepy Lwazi so

please not now and what's with this?"

Him:'what?" Me:"this family talk what's going on?

I thought I was just coming here to act like the

wife and nothing more" Him:"you.... Rori that's

not the point we can't be married and not have

kids" Me:"its not a marathon okay" Him:"just saying how I feel" Me:"understandable" Him:"so you understand why I'm doing this?" Me:"trying to trap me so that I don't leave but I think you have already and big time" Him:"I'm not trying that seriously I can't" Me:"good now let's not go there Lwazi please no babies just until I know what I'm doing then we can talk" Him:"can I fuck you though" Me:"wow really?" Him:"you are busy rubbing me and I'm in between your legs what do you expect" Me:"for you to be mature and just live with the fact that there ain't no funny business while you are lying to me" Him:"I said that's for your protection why can't we leave it?" Me:"cause I can't Lwazi I'm scared okay" Him:"I'll sleep with you so you don't be scared" Me:"that's not funny at all" Him:"I'm being serious since you don't believe me when I say no one is going to hurt you except for me" Me:"i see move I'd like to get some water" Him:"seat I'll get it for you" Me:"how lovely get up" He

grinned and just kissed my forehead he walked into the kitchen I relaxed a bit and when I was enjoying my sweet night. "Rori" he roared what did i do now huh. Me:"yes" Him:"what the fuck is this?" He was holding the pill box Me:"where did you get that?" Him:"I asked you a question first I said what the fuck is this?" Me:" I can explain" Him:" start now" He was walking towards me so I quickly stood up and went to the other couch. Me:"that's for last week I bought those after we had sex Lwazi I..." Him:"what did I say about these" Me:"last week Lwazi you left remember I... We didn't speak about this and I thought we just concluded that I can take precautions" Him:"come here" Me:"hell no, uh-uh, no, aint happening" Him:"I'm not playing with you I said come here" Me:"but that's an old box Lwazi old" Him:"I said come here" I shook my head Him:"you know what Rori it's cool... It's fine it's your body not mine" Me:"Lwazi wait it's not like that.... It's.." He just

ran up the stairs come on from hey it's cool to this nxa how did he even find the box though now I have to be apologizing anyway I followed him upstairs and went to his room I knocked and just walked in he was not there so I went to his bathroom and I found him busy playing with water splashing his face. Me:"Lwazi I'm serious that was last week I swear" Him:"I said it's cool" Me:"it's not I can tell from your voice" He looked at me busy wiping his face. Him:"it's fine really" I held on his face and just pecked his lips. Me:"I'm not ready to be a mom, and I don't know when I will be" He held my waist Him:"it's fine really" Me:"say it like you mean it then I'll believe you" He just sighed Me:"why do you want a baby so bad?" Him:"I don't want it so bad just that I realized that in life there are no guarantees and I could just die without anything to remind people that I was here" Me:"you shouldn't worry girls will remember you even when you dead they'll still drool on you" Him:'im

done with that im married now" I smiled Me:"is it?" Him:"mmh,and she's such a cute tomboy"
Me:"you don't say" He pecked my lips Him:"and she looked beautiful in her wedding dress I can still see it" Me:"mmh sounds like you are in love sir so I'll bounce and leave you to dream about your wife" Him:"not so fast now how about you sleep in my room tonight?" Me:"uh no I'll sleep in mine" Him:'then I'll sleep in yours" Me:'but I...want...to sleep alone without you trying to knock me up" Him:"and...I just want to sleep next to you that's all no funny business"
Me:"you are funny so I am not holding my breath" Him:"so I can come?" Me:"yeah sure but first wear some pj's" Him:"no need" Okay we walked to my room and I changed into my PJs like that lasted cause soon they were flying across the room but why me why huh he's so damn charming to resist

F

[03/08, 16:04] Mk: My handsome monster-

Our holy matrimony . . . EPISODE 20 . . .

RORI Lwazi and I were just laying there I was facing the other way and he had wrapped his arms around me with his leg in between mine I thought this wouldn't happen I thought we would live as planned like two people sharing a house but now here we are sharing more than that this is not going to end well. He was so quite busy moving his fingers up and down my shoulder with kisses following them. Me:"get me a car" Him:"show me your drivers license" Me:"but I want a car" Him:"I know that's why I said show me your driver's license" I turned around to face him and just smiled. Me:"Lwazi" Him:"yes" Me:"buy me a car" Him:"I'd buy you anything you want but not a car" Me:"please I'll be a good girl I promise" Him:"really?" Me:"yes" Him:"no" Ever done something you told yourself you wouldn't do? Well I just moved closer to him and moved my hand down his chest slowly as I possibly could

busy staring at his eyes biting on my lower lip.

Me:"buy me a car" I whispered. Him:"get a driver's license" he whispered Me:"Lwazi" I pecked his lips and just took his dick into my hand and started rubbing him .

Me:"buy...me...a..car" He shook his head I kissed him and just felt him groan in between the kiss and squeeze my ass I continued just rubbing him,he pulled away from the kiss.

Him:"do you know what you are getting yourself into?" Me:"a car seat" Him:"oh I see I hope it has seatbelts" Me:" " I got on top of him and

just kissed his forehead. Me:"it got wheels now" He nod as he fixed himself up holding on to my thighs.

Me:"I'm serious Lwazi" Him:"who said you are joking?" Me:"mxm I'm not going to let you ruin my vibe" Him:"please don't let me I'm

just being an idiot" Me:"I'll punch this hand of yours and inflict more pain" He shook his head with a smile on his face. Him:"lay it on me

please" Me:"it has a body now" He nod and just

pulled me towards him and we kissed God help me for I am going to be riding him like crazy he actually wow my granny was right

something is wrong with me I need to go to church I need serious prayers anyway as we were kissing Lwazi just pushed himself in and broke the kiss. Him:"seat properly before you crack my nuts" I nod and he held on my waist and pushed me down I felt my walls just get wider. Him:"you okay?" Me:"mmmh" Let the games begin this shit felt so good it is on another level even weed can't argue with it.

Me:"Lwazi" Him:"mmh" Me:"buy....buy me a car"

Him:"uh uh" Me:"Lwaziii...." Him:"shh you are not getting a car" Being denied something while they are literally fucking your brains is heart breaking he flipped me over and just took charge I'm not getting the car am I? I mean I don't see it happening at all time for plan B.

Me:"Buy me a laptop" Him:"okay"

Me:"uhhh...and a car" He shook his head with

small sweat creeping up on his face he'd cover my screams by kissing me I shouldn't have started this cause I'll live to regret it he flipped me over and it was now doggie style time. And then his phone rang people can't you see that we are doing something here huh, the nigga just took his phone and answered.

Him:"what?" Him:"you deal with it...fuck."

Him:"no just make sure it's there tomorrow" He kissed my cheek how nice he's busy screwing me and taking a call I feel important. Him:"yeah I'll be there tomorrow, tell the others"

Him:"don't test my patience just do it Senzo get it done everything should be legit or make it look like that now I have to go I'm busy" He just threw his phone on the bed and went about enjoying himself I'll lose weight in my stay here but this time around I started this myself we had sex till we couldn't. Me:"so when will I get my car?" Him:"ehh I'm going to get us some snacks what would you like to drink?" Me:"Opel

corsa" Him:"water will do you good, I'll be back"
Me:"some coke please" Him:"coming right up"
He wore his shorts and walked out, I just pulled
up the blanket and covered myself with it when
Lwazi's phone rang I ignored it and it rang
again I answered very much annoyed but I
acted cool. Me:"Lwazi's phone hello" "Who is
this? And where is Andrew?" Me:" hau girly you
call my husband's phone and you ask me who i
am?" "Bitch i said where is my boyfriend"
Me:"yoh who are you? And what do you mean
boyfriend?" "Tell Andrew that Chrissy called"
Me:"and you were struggling to just say your
name nxa futsek" I hung up and just threw the
phone at Lwazi who just walked in. Him:"ouch
what's that for?" Me:"your girlfriend Chrissy
called..." Him:"girlfriend? I don't know what you
are talking about" Me:"yeah whatever...." I took
my robe put it on and walked to the bathroom I
just took it off and got into the shower for some
reason I wasn't hurt just angry anger is all I

felt I took a quick shower I got out hoping to find Lwazi gone but he was laying on the bed looking at ceiling. Me:"why are you still here?" He looked at me and sat up straight Him:"cause we need to talk" Me:"we always need to talk with you I'm even tired" Him:"okay you shut up and listen to me" Me:"to what your lies? I think I have had enough" Him:"why dont you listen to me and here what i have to say?" Me:"cause i don't want to now shut up" Him:"no you shut up and listen to me, Rori yeah I know Chrissy she used to be my girl but she left for mexico with her brother" Me:"and you are telling me because? I seriously don't care" Him:"if I hear that I don't care line from you I'll burst" Me:"yeah go ahead burst... Move I'd like to get into bed I'm tired" He held my hands and just pulled me towards him. Him:"she is not my girlfriend she was that's old news okay" Me:"you done? I'd like to sleep" Him:"Rori why are you angry?" Me:"you lied to me....all I wanted was the truth that's all"

Him:"she's my ex that's the truth" Me:"okay but why is she calling you now? Why call you?"

Him:"I don't know I last heard from her when she was in Mexico" Me:"but she's calling you

now and she even calls me a bitch how disrespectful is she huh she calls me a bitch".

Him:"don't let her bother you and from the looks of the dialing code she's still in new Mexico"

Me:"block her Lwazi" Him:"okay I'll do it" I

looked at him Him:"okay look I'm doing it see

it's blocked" Me:"you still owe me for her calling

me a bitch" Him:"i didn't call you a bitch she did"

Me:"mxm let go of me" Him:"I'm sorry okay but

you do understand that my past will rock up

somewhere somehow" Me:"not in my face

please" Him:"fine but you should stop getting

angry over my past like I don't..." Me:"uh uh

don't lie we both know you get angry over my

past like crazy so don't lie..be getting me

disrespected by some Mexican potato how

degrading" Him:"oh wow really? Mexican

potato?" Me:"got a problem with it?" He shook his head. Him:"I'm cool don't worry about me" Me:"good now let go of me" Him:"seat here for a little bit" Me:"Lwazi please people are sleeping just let me sleep too" Him:"okay just seat and I'll tell you something" I rolled my eyes took a deep breath and just sat on his lap,I wrapped my legs around his waist and he wrapped his arms around my waist with mine on his neck, he leaned forward with me moving back. Me:"no you said you want to talk" Him:"just a little motivation" I slapped him. Me:"there is motivation now talk" Him:"ouch...but I'll forgive that anyway Rorisho will you do me the honor of being the mother of my kids?" Me:"well actually they do that when you are asking me to marry you not the other way round" Him:"well we are already married see we have rings on our fingers" Me:"that's not true I don't have mine" Him:"what? Why not Rori where is it?" Me:"right there I took it off when I was going to take a

shower geez" Him:"put it on now" Me:"how if you are busy holding on to me like I'll run away now say what you want please" Him:"I want us to have a baby together" I pecked his lips I so have to take precautions as of tomorrow
Me:"not now Lwazi" Him:"but after you finish with school we'll try for a baby right?" Me:"mmh as many as you like" Him:"good let's get some practice" Me:"uh uh I'm tired Lwazi tired as in Tired" Him:"just one tiny bit" Me:"no go to sleep tiny bit my foot, with you tiny is a whole three hours" He shrug Him:"I'm just fit like that don't blame me" Me:"I don't blame you I'm just tired now get into bed and sleep" I kissed his forehead and just pushed him back. Him:"yeah I know this move" Me:"you are an idiot amongst idiots wow go to sleep" I got off him and just pushed him to the side. Me:"move to your side" Him:"evil wife you are" I got into bed and just faced the door he wrapped his arms around me and began kissing my neck Me:"stop that now"

Him:"good night" Me:"stop doing that please I'd like to actually sleep" Him:"I'm saying good night" Me:"I heard you now stop it" [Phone rings] Him:"leave it..." I just took my phone and it was Tshepi so I answered. Me:"hello" Tshepi:"Rori sorry to wake you but something is wrong" Lwazi was busy irritating me with the neck kisses. Me:"Lwazi stop it... Tshepi what's going on?" Tshepi:"am I disturbing you?" Me:"just tell me what's going on?" Tshepi:"it's gogo we brought her to the hospital" Me:"What? Lwazi maan stop....Tshepi what happened to gogo?" Tshepi:"she collapsed and we think it might be a heart attack" Me:"what did the doctor say?" Tshepi:"they haven't spoken to us they are still busy with her" Me:"okay I'm on my way" Lwazi:"no you are not"he whispered Tshepi:"You'll find me and Winter" Me:"cool let me dress up" I hung up and just got out of bed. Me:"can you get up please let right now" Him:"where are we going?" Me:"to the hospital

granny just got admitted" Him:"fuck I'll drive you" Me:"I wouldn't have thought of that myself now hurry up" Him:"relax please I'm just saying" I wore some track pants and a long sleeves shirt with an Urban jersey I put on my sneakers and beanie Lwazi came back in his sweatpants and a blue jersey. Me:"can we go now?" Him:"yeah let's go please relax I'm sure she's fine" Me:"those two pests better not have anything to do with this they better not have" Him:"Rori I'm sure it's just old age" Me:"so she gets old age when they are back? Lwazi she's been old ever since I knew her but she survived" Him:"she'll be fine I promise and it's okay to cry I won't use it against you" Me:"focus on the road" Him:"okay so she's at the public hospital" Me:"yep" He drove us to the hospital Lord knows I was angry I hope those two didn't have anything to do with this and I'm sure Lwazi saw that cause he was busy trying to calm me down I just wanted to punch him but I just shut him

up.

[03/08, 16:05] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . . EPISODE 21 . . .

RORI . . . The drive to the hospital was
freaking me out where Lwazi stopped the car
and locked us in. Him:"come here" Me:"just
drive me to my granny please" He reclined the
seat and laid aback. Him:"just comeseat here
I want to tell you something" Me:"Lwazi
don't start with me please just drive" Him:"no
now hurry up" Me:"I hope they shoot you nxa"
Him:"bullet proof windows Nana they can try" I
took off my seatbelt and just sat on his lap
facing him. Me:"what's going on?" He shrug and
just hugged me he literally squeezed me I
just sat there with my hands covering my mouth.
Him:"I'm horny now" he whispered I just sat
there not even moving just feeling his warm
embrace he smells so welcoming I don't want
to move. Him:"you know when I say I'm horny
I'm usually quite serious and I'll be hoping to be

satisfied and...." Me:"shut up please" He chuckled and kissed my head. Him:"I'm sure granny is okay Rori that woman is tough trust me I know so don't worry okay and if she needs extra medical care I'll make a plan okay I'll even give her my heart" Me:"you don't have a heart" Him:"and why am I doing this? My legs are numb actually" Me:"you asked me to seat here and its comfy" Him:"if we were at home I'd show you flames" Me:"mxm... Thank you for the hug I needed it" Him:"but now I need more" Me:"umh that's weird so I'm going to my seat and you'll drive us to the hospital okay" I got off him and just sat on the passengers and put on my seatbelt,Lwazi rubbed my thigh. Him:"she'll be fine understand?" I nod and squeezed his hand he flashed his teeth and started the car and the crazy topic began and they were started by me. Me:"so can I get a tattoo?" He gave me a side eye. Him:"why?" Me:"cause it's cute" Him:"umh won't they expel you at school?"

Me:"they won't see it haa the place I plan to draw it no one will see it" Him:"where do you want to get it?" Me:"down there" Him:"where... Nxa are you crazy? Hell no uh uh forget it" Me:"come on it'll be beautiful" Him:"so you want to open your legs for another guy and you want me allow that? Are you crazy I'd kill you even before he touches you" Me:" it'll be a picture of you" Him:"no jeez you are crazy" Me:"mxm you are no fun..." Him:"come let's go they are waiting for us" Me:"can I get it on my ass then like bam a tattoo on my ass" He banged the steering wheel with his head so I got out before he fainted and I will be blamed he got out too and when I saw that I'm really at a hospital the reason why I am out of bed this late came back my grandma is laying in there fighting for her life, I started panicking and couldn't breath I held on my chest. Him:"heyi you can get a tattoo" I fanned my face a bit Me:"I... I can't breath Lwazi... I can't" He lifted me up and just

smashed his lips on mine i stood there star struck I couldn't respond and he pulled away.

Him:"can you breath now?" I shook my head

He held on to my face and just slowly kissed I responded and held on his

hands as the kiss grew tastier we had to break it which he slowly broke it and pecked my lips.

Him:"can you breath now?" I slightly nod and he kissed my forehead. Him:"now stop having

panic attacks I can't keep on kissing you I'm suffering" Me:"shut up please" We walked in

and found the sisters sleeping on the bench I shook Winter and she woke up rubbing her eyes.

Winter:"hi guys...you sure took your time"

Lwazi:"we were busy doing what married people do at such a time" Winter:"oh yeah,and what is

that?" Lwazi:"you don't want to know... So how is the old woman?" Well Tshepi woke up.

Tshepi:"oh hey guys... Why were you so late?"

Lwazi:"we..." Me:"shut it please... Guys how is gogo?" Winter:"the doctor said it was a minor

heart attack due to stress" Me:"what happened?" They kept quite I hate it when people keep quite when I ask a question.

Me:"don't make me ask you twice" Tshepi:"she had a fight with our 'mother' " Me:"see I told you Lwazi those idiots should leave" Winter:" you'd think we didn't tell them that but they won't and that's what Granny was shouting about" Me:"so when can she come home?" Winter:" I don't know but Rori those people will send her back again" Me:"not while I'm still alive they won't...Lwazi drive me home" Lwazi:"but..."

Me:"I mean my grandmothers Lwazi take me there now....guys need a lift?" Lwazi:"woah you guys shouldn't be doing this not now even"

Me:"if you won't drive us I'll call Jim he'll come"

Lwazi:"no you won't...firstly I pay Jim so I could tell him not to come and secondly you are not going about this the rational way" Me:"and what way is that huh? Lwazi I'm doing this the way I know how now please take me to the house I

beg of you" Lwazi:"I suggest you seat down and calm down Rori come on" I folded my arms staring at him telling me to calm down. Me:"see I'm calm now asemblief take me to the house we'll be dropping these two off" Tshepi:"we'll sleep here we can't leave her" Me:"you have an infant to take care of Tshepi you need to sleep....I'll be here first thing tomorrow morning I promise let's go" Lwazi:"is that your plan to cause havoc at that place" Me:"keep talking and you'll sleep on the couch" He nod and just stood there arms folded. Me:"Winter get up and let's go please" Winter:"don't you think you should see gogo first?" Me:"no she's sleeping" Winter:"okay then let's go" Lwazi:"I understand you guys are busy planning hey you are going home.... Rori we came in a two seater car unless they will fit in the boot" Me:"why do you always have to be the bearer of bad news Lwazi? call Jim please" Lwazi:"I was just saying... I'll call a cab for them

it's much faster than Jim" Me:"whatever just do it..." He was already on his phone so yeah I waited with the girls having a husband like Lwazi is just putting your life at risk and I'm sure his family doesn't know about the bullet wound. Lwazi:"umh we should go and wait for the taxi outside.. " He held my hand and pulled me outside with the girls following us, we didn't wait for long and the taxi was already there Lwazi gave the girls money to pay and we got into the car and drove after them but soon we'll be taking a short right I so wanted to go to the house and kick those demons out of there I know the girls won't do it but Lwazi just decided to be the voice of reason how annoying right Him:"am I still sleeping on the couch?" Me:"don't talk please" Him:"Rori you going to that house and shouting at them won't fix anything they'll still be there" Me:"says who? That is my grandmother's house and I was going to throw them out not shout at them I

don't shout" Him:"where will they go at such a time?" I shrug Me:"don't know and I don't care I just want them out of there before gogo gets back or she'll speak for them" Him:"so you want to throw them out now! Where will they sleep?" Me:"I seriously don't care if they sleep under a bridge or not, I just want them out of our lives forever" Him:"okay I hear you now stop sulking I'll handle it" Me:"really? " Him:"yes and no not in that way you think of handling it I'll talk not shoot" Me:"fair enough,but you know I have an even better plan " Him:"no are you crazy don't even get on my nerves by suggesting that" Me:"you don't know my plan yet.... I was going to say you unleash me and I deal with them" Him:"I said I'll do it now forget it" Me:"jeez bossy much?" He gave me this creepy side eye so I just kept my mouth shut the whole way back home just listening to the engine roaring we got to our house and the moment he stopped i got out and walked inside Lord knows at a time

like this I want to smoke or even drink so I went to the kitchen and just took a beer and when I was about to drink he just had to snatch it away from me Me:"Lwazi please just let me have some..." He turned me around to face him. Me:"give it back" Him:"I won't be sleeping with a drunk person...Rori let's go to bed" Me:"I can't sleep Lwazi so please" Him""you will so let's go I'll be right next to you" Me:"that's reassuring can I have a sip" He nod and just took a sip of the beer and then kissed me the only thing I felt was the smell of the beer not the beer itself he pulled away from the kiss. Him:"let's go you have had enough" Me:"but I didn't drink" Evil guy just decided to spill the beer down the drain when he could have just given it to me anyway he came behind me and started pushing me upstairs when we got there he took off his clothes and so did I he opened up the blanket for me tapping the side of my bed. Him:"come" Me:"look the other way" Him:"no funny business

I promise" He made a cross on his chest with a smile on his face so I got into bed and faced the door he wrapped his arms around me kissing my back, but he said no funny business.

Me:"stop" Him:"you know I hate it when you give me your back so turn and we'll sleep" Me:"but

you just have to close your eyes and all is well"

Him:"just turn around" Me:"argh fine..." I did as

told and just slept facing him he pecked my lips and just tightly grabbed on to me. Him:"good

night" Me:"night" I guess this is how he wanted

us to sleep cause he was still as can be and I

slowly drifted off to sleep I'm tired in more ways

than one and when I wake up I'll have to go and

see my granny then go and deal with those

monsters at the house they are wrong if they

think they'll take my grandmother's house they

are mistaken for real. let them try i

[03/08, 16:05] Mk: My handsome monster-

Our holy matrimony EPISODE 22 . .

RORI . . I woke up as early as I could and

went to take a shower and Lwazi was still sleeping but when I got out he was awake and on his phone it's like he dreams about it so I just put on some body lotion and and decided to plait my hair a bit and make a Mohawk.

Him:"if you want to go to the salon just say it"

Me:"nah I'm good" I saw him sit on the edge of bed I went to put on some clothes and it was a short light blue dress and black sneakers no

heels Me:"you coming with me to the hospital?"

He shook his head with eyes stuck on his phone.

Me:"okay see you when I get back" Him:"wait

Rori..." Me:"what?" Him:"well I was thinking that on Saturday you'd like to join me and friends you know just to take your mind off things"

Me:"join you where?" Him:"the family house..."

We are having a little get together and everyone has to bring a partner" Me:"okay cool"

Him:"you'll be there?" Me:"we'll go together okay relax now I have to go to the hospital" Him:"can

I get a hug?" Me:"what's with this obsession

with my body?" He shrug and just opened up his hands for me I walked towards him and I hugged him even though he was sitting down now I have to be the one hugging him. He tightly gripped on my waist with me rubbing his head. Me:"don't forget to change the bandage or else you'll rot" Him:" you are leaving how will I do that though?" Me:"with the very same hands you are squeezing my butt with Lwazi I seriously have to go" Him:"okay I just have to go and sort out some stuff then I will go past your house" Me:"thanks now let go" He slowly let go of me and I just took my cellphone and walked out calling Jim to drive me to the hospital I didn't even have breakfast and I know I didn't make breakfast for Lwazi but right now I can't be a good wife to him he has to wait. When we got to the hospital I asked the receptionist if I could see my Granny and she said she was being discharged today really and those people are still at the house she can't find them there

so I called Lwazi first and he didn't pick up mxm
I hate it when he doesn't pick up. I sent him a
text ΔHurry and get rid of them granny is being
discharged today as in right now Δ I went to see
gogo who was still laying in bed. Me:"gogo"
Her:"hello child...what's wrong? You look sad"
Me:'I almost lost you gogo, and for what? I don't
understand why you stopped me from throwing
them out" Her:"well what's done is done don't
worry" Me:"can I lie and say I'm not worried? " I
kissed her forehead Me:"well you are being
discharged today isn't it amazing?" Her:"I'll be
happy once I get home and sleep in my own
bed" Me:"well you will but I didn't know you were
being discharged so that's why I'm so empty
handed" "Morning guys" Tshepi walked in
holding a sports bag and placed it on the bed.
Me:"hi..umh is Lwazi at the house?" She shook
her head. Tshepi:"was he supposed to..."
[Phone rings] I checked the caller and it was
Lwazi so I just excused myself and went

outside to answer. Him:"sorry I was busy"

Me:"it's okay so are you done now? I mean gogo

is changing" Him:"I just need to finish up

something just go I'll meet you there" Me:"But

Lwazi.." Him:"Rori I'm held up but I'll be there I

promise" Me:"fine let me get back...see you

when you decide to come" I hung up and just

went back into the room and found gogo

dressed and ready to bounce. Me:"look at you"

Gogo:"heyi don't start wena...who were you

talking to?" Me:"dearest husband, he said he'll

meet us at the house" Tshepi:"you two seem

follow each other everywhere" Me;"yes he's

supposed to follow me... I'm his wife"

Tshepi:"you sure you didn't give him some spice

like in his food didn't you add an extra vava

voom?" Me:"gogo are you sure she's my sister?"

Gogo:"she is there is no turning back"

Tshepi:"but Rorisho the guy is always besides

you when you call" Me:"that's his choice and it's

not always don't overstep the mark... Lwazi

likes keeping tabs on me that's all" Gogo:"he knows they'll take you away don't blame him..."

Me:" I don't know about that so I suggest we bounce" We held granny and walked out with her and I went to get her prescribed pills and we went home I hope Lwazi has dealt with them cause I decided to delay the drive back by going to the mall to buy my granny some fruits,vegetables and all those weird healthy stuff and only then did we go home. Me:"umh Gogo now that you are back home I'll have to throw those people out of the house before they kill you without even seeing my first born" .

Tshepi:"you are pregnant?" Me:"no I'm not why would I be pregnant again?" She shrug

Gogo:"Rori that is my daughter I just can't throw her out" I pat her shoulder Me:"I'll do it for you don't worry" She was not surprised by what I said my feelings towards those people are not hidden and I'm good with that I don't have to pretend to like them at all. When we got to the

house I saw Lwazi's car my reign of terror
is ruined anyway we got out and just walked
inside and they were just sitting there like they
were in a movie theater. Winter:"finally...Gogo
how are you feeling?" Gogo:"I'm fine I just need
to lay down" Winter:"of course come I'll take you
to your room" Tshepi:"and I'll make you some
salad" Me:"and I'll get rid of some unwanted
stuff" Lwazi shook his head and I just shrug
walking towards him,and he pulled me to seat
on his lap. Him:"play nice" he whispered Me:"so
parents when are you leaving? Like actually
leaving and going back home" Man:"we are
home Palesa" Me:"and he calls me Palesa when
I'm trying to be nice... My name is Rorisho not
Palesa" Woman:"you do understand that Palesa
means flower" Me:"I said when are you leaving I
don't need teachings of how to translate
names" Man:"we can't leave..." Me:"why I mean
nobody wants you here.. The door is not locked
and you know your way out" Lwazi:"Rori" Me:'uh

uh...these people came right after they found out about my marriage to you don't you find that somewhat weird? The house is not renovated and worth more" Woman:"so you saying we are after money?" Me:"am I wrong? What if I promised to give you 100 grand would you stay?" They kept quiet Me:"see if you weren't after money you'd shout at me for even suggesting the fact that I would give you money to leave your mother again" Lwazi:"well that can be arranged" Me:"arranged my ass...they don't deserve anything from us and I suggest you leave people please just leave us in peace" Man:"you are throwing your parents out?" Me:"parents? Dude the only parents I know are grandpa and granny and I'd give them anything they need nothing more nothing less" Woman:"you do understand that I gave birth to you, you may change your name but I'm still your mother" Me:"you gave birth to me but who raised me?" She kept quiet Me:"good now never

pat yourself on the back I hate it we won't get along very well now when are you leaving"

Man:"we can't leave" Me:"why is that? You need directions back home?" Lwazi:"they don't have a home"

I looked at him and he nod
Jesus I so wanted to laugh my ass off but I got a hold of my morals. Me:"so you are homeless? You are homeless wow how does it feel?"

Lwazi:"Rori behave" Me:"no I just love the word homeless" I was seriously laughing my ass off I can't believe they don't have a home. Me:'you know what Lwazi let's go home umh I'll visit granny tomorrow" Tshepi:"you are leaving?"

Me:"sis these two actually suck the life out of me" Tshepi:"yeah umh thanks for being here"

Me:"always umh tell me if Gogo needs anything okay" She nod and i just stood up and pulled

Lwazi up. Lwazi:"bye mam and..." Me:"haa shut up please mam my foot" Tshepi:" see what I

mean Rori?" Me:"he's boring sometimes mam my foot... You two I suggest you make a plan

cause I'm serious you are leaving the next time I'm here understand?" We walked out and Lwazi pulled me to his car Him:"what's with you?" Me:"what? Lwazi you said you'll get rid of them but no you are becoming friends with them" Him:"you wanted me to kick people out of their parent's house?" Me:"yes!" Him:"well I'm sorry but that's not how I roll Rori you and your family should seat down and talk this through" Me:"do I look like I'm in the mood to talk" Him:"hold up watch the tone.." Me:"please throw me out of the car maybe that'll make you feel better" Him:"who bewitched you?' Me:"the same person that bewitched you" Him:"I think you got it mixed up" Me:"trust me shut up while you still have the chance" Him:'or what?" Me:"you'll sleep alone and hungry" Him:"okay then I'm shutting up...umh you don't mind if we go past the club right" Me:"no problem as long as I can get a beer" Him:"we'll see but we won't be at the bottom floor we going up" Me:"there are two

levels?" He nod Me:"bottom floor is general access and top is VIP?" Him:"yeah and also a casino" Me:"imma gamble you away" Him:"you love my dick too much you wouldn't do that" Me:"mxm keep telling yourself that till kingdom come... I don't even know what you are talking about" Him:"mmh tonight we'll see you'll be begging me" Me:"to shut up? Of course I hate your voice" Him:"I never talk when we're having sex...I just feel the mood and enjoy it" Me:"Lwazi shut up" Him:"once we start planning for a baby we'll go three times a day" Me:"fuck...Lwazi we forgot the pills" He smiled so broadly you'd swear he'd won a competition. Me:"no Lwazi please... We'll have to buy them or even take me to the doctor" Him:"you won't get pregnant relax" Me:"relax? Relax? God he says I must relax, he's telling me to relax" Him:"I'm sure God heard you now" Me:"Lwazi if anything suggests me being pregnancy I'll abort the baby understand?" Him:"you wouldn't" Me:"says

who?" Him:"I'm not saying you wouldn't cause I'm surprised I'm serious you wouldn't cause after I'll kill you" Me:"but Lwazi" Him:"you kill my baby I'll kill you... Life is like that Rori and I'm not playing nogal... I'll hurt you" I swallowed hard and just shut up why did I even suggest abortion now he's ugly with anger I started tapping my thighs as we drove in silence to the club/casino or whatever it is. When the car stopped I was about to open the door when he caught my hand as tightly as he could,I turned around to look at him. Me:"yes" Him:"never mention abortion in my presence understand?" I nod Him:"good now I'm sorry if I scared you I just lost it when you said you'd kill my baby that's not on" Me:"I'm sorry" Him:"and don't think about doing it in private cause I'll know"

I just nod trying to avoid my tears.

Him:"well let's go I have some things to do"

Me:"can you let go now please you are hurting me"

Him:"I'm sorry" He slowly let go of me and I

got out and tears just literally flowed out I looked up trying to stop them but haa as if this side I don't want Lwazi to even see that I'm scared. "Rorisho let's go" I quickly wiped the tears away took a deep deep breath and just turned around with a fake smile on my face I walked up to him and he just hugged me and then the water works began. Him:"I'm sorry Rori...sorry just that hearing that you would kill my child hurt me" I had my hands over my mouth as he was busy rubbing my back. Him:"I'm sorry okay I promise I'll stop scaring you" I nod He broke the hug and kissed my forehead Him:"you still angry?" I shook my head this was something creepy I mean we are standing in a parking lot and then people are busy passing by going to the club when Lwazi just decided to move his hands down and grab my butt I looked at him and he smiled. Him:"I'm sorry" He sulked Him:"yay you smiled now gimme a kiss" I shook my head and

he tightly squeezed my butt. Him:"do it"

Me:"Lwazi we are in public" Him:"so? Who said I care where we are? I said gimme a kiss" I just shook my head and he just leaned over to kiss me I moved back at first, but he leaned over and smashed his lips on mine he took my hands and just wrapped them around his neck then went back to grabbing on my ass giving it a squeeze here and there I'd moan in between the kiss till he stopped and pulled on my lower lip.

Him:"forgive me" I nod and just slapped him.

Me:"never threaten me again understand?"

Him:"cross my heart and hope to die" Me:"you'll die that's for sure" Him:"come let's go then we can go home and I'll cook" Me:"you can cook?"

He pecked my lips Him:"it's called ordering in"

Me:"I see" He held my hand and walked with me inside believe me this goes to show this is a high class stuff he was holding on my hand as he was busy waving at people as we walked up the stairs to the VIP area and believe me the

casino was top notch. Him:"want anything to drink?" Me:"yes please a..." Him:"no alcohol" Me:"mxm a glass of water" Him:"I'll get you some juice wait right here" I nod and just took out my phone and started fiddling with my phone, when someone touched my ass I lifted my head and looked around and I found this guy who seems to be a bit older than Lwazi busy staring at me with a weird grin on his face. Me:"can I help you?" Him:"yeah give me your numbers" I showed him my left hand and grinned Me:"I'm married brother so please keep your hands to yourself cause I'm paid for in full no cent missing understand?" He smirked and just stood up yoh I felt like I could just call out for Lwazi but when I looked at the counter he was still busy with his staff I hate the VIP section. The weird man just decided to hold my waist with me trying to push him off. Me:"let go of me please I'm serious I don't want you...jeez your breath smells like cow dung now let go". I

shouted the last part and pushed him off and he was chuckling. Him:"I like this playing hard to get act" Me:"what? Dude you are so not my type hallelujah" Him:"come I'll buy you a drink" I just rolled my eyes and clicked my tongue.

Me:"broke ass nigga" I mumbled I tried walking to Lwazi but he held me and tried to pull me back hell no I turned around with a slap to his face. Me:"leave me alone you pervert just because you wear cheap suits makes me want you, I'm married" I was now shouting and that got Lwazi's attention and he literally came running to my rescue I hid behind him.

Lwazi:"and what are you doing to my wife?"

Me:"he said he wants me Lwazi" Lwazi:"dude get out now...you know what everybody listen up this is my wife not ours and you came here to drink not to harass my wife and anyone who even has such thoughts about her they'll live to regret it. So if you don't like my rules get out of my club" They kept quiet. Lwazi:'now back to

you...get out of my club and right now"

Guy:"you'll lose customers with such a behavior" Lwazi just caught him by the collars and pulled him closer to him. Lwazi:"I hate repeating myself...I said get out of my club and if you even look at my wife with lustful eyes I'll poke them out one by one understand? So when I let go of you I want you to start running down those stairs and out of the door am I clear?" my husband is the boss cause the guy nod and Lwazi let him go and just fixed up his suit and when he let go the guy bolted out of there. Lwazi turned around and just kissed my forehead. Him:"you okay?" I nod with a smile on my face. Him:"you should stop being so cute... Come we'll go to my office" I nod He motioned to the waiters to bring our drinks I followed my monster of husband to his huge office I went to seat down. Him:"what did that guy do?" Me:"he was just grabbing on me" Him:"what?!" I nod Me:"he touched your properties" Him:" and

you didn't tell me this because?' Me:"I thought you'd punch him anyway I mean I'm your wife"
Him:"which part did he touch exactly?" Me:"well the ass,then squeezed my waist and ass once more"
Him:"he didn't touch the boobs?" I shook my head
Him:"well I could just beat him to a pulp"
Me:"that's much better.... I hate the top floor"
Him:"you'll love it as time goes by I mean you'll visit me here" I shook my head
Him:"come here now"
Me:'why though?" Him:"uh cause I married you and I'm calling you"
Me:"O-kay sir" I slowly pushed back the chair and stood up walking towards him, I stood in front of him giving him space to grab on my waist. [Door knock]
Lwazi:"come in" Well a waiter walked in to him busy moving his hand up and down my back.
Waiter:"your drinks sir" Lwazi:"thanks" He nod and just walked out.
Me:"is the juice for me Lwazi?" Him:"yep I said no more alcohol for you"
Me:"says who?" Him:"me" Me:"we'll see about that..." I quickly grabbed the whisky glass

and gulped it down, it stung so bad I was busy coughing. Him: "happy now?" Me: "Lwazi my throat is burning" Him: "serves you right... drink this" Me: "look at that he cares" I took a small sip of the juice. Me: "move back I'd like to seat" He pushed back his chair and I sat on the table and he pushed my legs apart and got in between them he pushed my dress up a bit. Him: "now I want my whisky" I took his telephone and just gave it to him. Me: "order in" Him: "but hands off right? No more taking what's mine" I nod and he kissed my thigh, he ordered in after he stood up and just grabbed on my face lashing his lips on top of mine I responded by pulling him closer to me I pushed off his jacket and threw it wherever it landed. [Door knock] Lwazi: "mmh" he groaned He was reluctant on pulling away from the kiss but he did busy pecking my lips. Him: "Come in...." A waiter walked in with his drink and the guy just decided to start kissing my neck while the

waiter was still here and as soon as the door closed it began the real smooching and seduction and yeah having sex in the office it's the married life people you can do as you please as long as it's with your husband.

F

[03/08, 16:05] Mk: 🍷 My handsome monster
-Our holy matrimony . . . EPISODE 23 . . .

RORI . . Me:"Lwazi I don't want to go "

Him:"just get dressed before I fuck your brains out" Me:"you mean beat me up or have sex with me?" He gave me a raised eyebrow and shrug I seriously don't feel like going to that get together anymore I just want to stay inside cause my body is going crazy, I haven't smoked or drank in weeks like ever since I lived with Lwazi and he started talking about a baby I haven't done anything of that sort,he replaced the white and red wine with juice that's how crazy this dude is and the whisky is locked up

there are no beers in the fridge anymore the life I live this side I'll be watched like crazy so yeah I stood up and went to our closet and picked some shorts and the red vest matching his and a black jacket and some red and black Adidas sneakers I took off the robe and just put on my white lace undies and their bra with Lwazi staring at me. Me:"don't even think about it" Him:"how can I not? You are busy stripping in front of me" Me:"and then? Just go back to whatever you were doing" Him:"come help me put on the bandage" I walked to him half naked as I was. Me:"uh uh turn around and let's see" He smirked and turned around the wound was good now like no more oozing blood so he's cool now so I just put the bandage patch instead of the wrap around bandage, I tapped his shoulder. Me:"I'm done" He turned around and just held on to my thighs kissing my tummy. Him:"you've changed you know" Me:"in a good or bad way?" Him:"in a good way and I like it"

Me:"and you mean me not smoking or drinking?" Him:"yes and I'm proud of you for that I know if we were to fall pregnant my baby would be in safe hands" Me:"baby yeah that thing" I exhaled loudly Him:"what's wrong?" Me:"Lwazi I'm scared what if I neglect the baby like I was? Or maybe the kid hates me I don't want that to happen to me" Him:"hey you'll be a great mother even though you are crazy but you'll be the best mom ever" Me:"really?" He nod and just pulled me closer to him and just hugged me laying his head on my tummy I ran my fingers through his hair and it's growing daily. Me:"can I get dressed already?" Him:"let's go like this half naked" Me:"you are wearing pants and I'm wearing nothing" He chuckled Him:"believe me that I know for sure... I love you" Me:"what?" He cleared his throat and just let go of me. Me:"what did you say Lwazi" He shook his head and just turned around to look at the mirror I wanted to smile or maybe start

jumping up and down with joy but I just kept my cool and walked away smiling to myself. Me: "I love you too" I whispered I put on my short and the vest like my entire outfit and Lwazi was wearing a black torn up jean with the red vest matching mine and a jacket on top with his brown Timberland boots he didn't comb his hair and I just let my braids hang freely without any make up I feel like a Queen I dont need make up to define myself I put on red lipstick and took my cellphone and headsets just in case they are boring. Lwazi was done and to be honest he looked so cute. Me: "comb your hair" Him: "no now let's go" Me: "you look dirty" Him: "I'm not dirty now come I don't want to be late" Me: "we'll be fashionably late don't worry" He pulled me closer to him and just smashed his lips on to mine we kissed slowly and passionately and he just pulled away. Him: "you look beautiful" Me: "you don't mean that I know I'm sure you are shooting me in your head cause of the shorts"

Him:"you know I hate shorts but I will forgive you just this once" Me:"good let's bounce so that means I can drink?" Him:"don't make me turn you back to wear a long dress" I grinned and just pinched his cheek walking ahead of him my twist was touch the ass type of vibe so believe me I'll be rolling heads I got into the passenger seat and I can't wait for January so that I can get my laptop cause a car is off the list I was just letting him rub my thigh as much as he wanted till we got to the family house.

Him:"you know my mom and dad lived right across each other" Me:"so your dad saw his girlfriend every day?" Him:"yep and he says they made crazy love" Me:"what's crazy love?" He smiled and got out I quickly got out too

Me:"Lwazi I asked you a question what's crazy love?" Him:" I'll show you tonight" Me:'tell me don't snow me" Him:"come here" I walked towards him and he kissed my cheek wrapping his hand around my waist we walked to the

sound of laughter and huge topics and by the looks of things I was the only one wearing shorts and sneakers cause all the girls were wearing dresses and had weaves with loads of make up on. Lwazi:"heita" The guys stood up and they shoulder bumped came to shake my hand. KB:"someone is looking hot" Me:"don't I always?" Lwazi:" guys open your eyes and ears.... This is my wife Rorisho Mkhize, Rori this is Dre" He raised his hand and I just nod Lwazi:"and that's Senzo,petro,Cumani, Jerome, Siya and Kwezi" They all waved at me . Me:"nice to meet you" Lwazi:"and those are their girls" I waved at them and they gave me attitude I don't understand why cause all these guys are married I mean their fingers say it all I sat down on the double seater and Lwazi sat behind me. Lwazi:"so where is the meat?" KB:"in the fridge we finished marinating it and in a few we shall begin" Lwazi:"I'll go and get us some drinks" Me:"no juice please" Lwazi:"water then" I just

put on the headsets and I listened to some music, Lwazi came back with a bottle of beer and juice for me I almost burst out laughing but I contained myself, he sat down and I laid my head on his lap. Me:"enjoying the beer?" He nod Me:"I so hate you" He winked and that just irritated me so I went back to my music busy tapping my leg in the air I actually don't know what they are talking about but Lwazi's hand on my thighs reassured me we still cool.

LWAZI Rori was just in a world of her own where I just pulled out the headsets. Me:"you are being rude now" Rori:"I'm sorry can I have those back now?" Me:"no now switch it off before I take it away" She sulked and just shoved her phone at me. Rori:"first I have to drink juice and now...ahh Karabo your brother is not fair" Karabo:"why can't you drink? Or are you already expecting" Rori:"expecting what?" I rubbed her tummy. Me:"only God knows big brother" Rori:"are you crazy? That's not

happening" Dre:"you'd have cute babies"
Karabo:"thank God for someone agreeing with me" Rori:"mxm y'all are mad ehh..." She got up and pushed my hand away. Me:"where are you going?" Rori:"bathroom" Bev:"I'll take you" Rori just stared at her and shook her head. Rori:"I'll manage thank you" She fixed herself up and strut up the stairs I seriously hope no one pisses her off I like this quite sweet none violent side of her please girls stay out of her way. RORI "I'll take you" really now my girl at first you give me attitude and now you want to be buddy buddy with me mxm, I went to the bathroom and peed wiped myself and flushed I went to wash my hands I wiped my hands and went back downstairs and here I was thinking that I won't be tested but I was a found some girl on Lwazi's lap I just stood behind her cause they didn't see me arms folded and the boys were busy scratching their heads. Me:"no please don't mind me... LWAZI!!" He quickly

pushed her off to the couch and smiled at me.

Me:'really? I'm being replaced already?"

Lwazi:"no Rori I...umh this is.." Me:"ntombi move I'd like to seat please" She looked at me and just crossed her legs. Me:"God please God nkosi yami bless me and stop me from sinning against you Amen.... Heyi I said move

asemblielief" Girl:"and who are you?" Me:"the person who is going to break you in half if you don't get up and leave" Lwazi:"Dimakatso go seat there please for your own safety"

Karabo:"I'd listen to Lwazi if I were you, stand up" Me:"first Rori don't smoke and then now don't drink and now no this is...why am I being tested" I mumbled Dimakatso or what's her name stood up and she just bumped into me on purpose. Me:"not today satan not today please" I took a deep breath and went to seat down and just laid back on Lwazi's lap. Lwazi:"I'm.." I placed my finger on his mouth. Me:"not now please" He nod and just leaned over and pecked

my lips I know he'll be saying that he's sorry very soon that Dimakatso girl was busy staring at me like crazy while the guys went about chatting and having fun. Me:'Lwazi"
Lwazi:"yeah?" Me:"I'm hungry" Karabo:"he's starving you makoti" Lwazi;"mxm does she look starved? " Karabo:"yeah she wasn't like this when we saw her..." Me:"people I said I'm hungry not discuss my weight hau" Lwazi:"okay what would you like?" Me:"lamb chops,ribs, sausages and oh half chicken" They were just staring at me with buldging eyes.
Me:"I'm joking jeez" Lwazi:"what do you want then?" Me:"my phone back it's boring and some people are creeping me out" He didn't give it back so yeah I just listened to the topics all day long till we went outside to braai cause it was no longer hot so the boys made the fire just so you know I'm not looking for friends so I just sat down with the others while Dimakatso was busy touching Lwazi all over while he was busy

I mean she was sticking onto him like gum on paper. "So how is your marriage to Lwazi?"
Me "huh?" Loretta: "I said how is the married life"
Me: "it's quite good actually it's fun" Bev: "so you guys love each other" I smiled Me: "you could say that yeah" Itu: "well Dimakatso was his girl just so you know and she doesn't give up" I chuckled Me: "she will don't worry I have my ways" I tapped the table with my fingers on the table busy looking at Lwazi and his girl this girl though. Me: "anyone for a refill?" Itu: "I'll come with" Me: "no it's cool relax sit down... I just need to get some fresh air" I pushed back the chair and just took my glass since the others were using plastic cups I walked back inside busy contemplating on how to deal with Dimakatso and God answered my prayers but not in the way I wanted to, I felt someone spill something on my back and from the smell it was alcohol im not drinking but I'll smell like alcohol I turned around just to find Dimakatso.

Me:" do you have a death wish?" Dima:"no
now what's the thing with you and Lwazi?"
Me:"what is it to you?" Dima:"he's my boyfriend"
Me:" yoh my dear God why do you always
have to put tests in my way" She just shoved
me I dusted myself off. Me:"don't start
something you can't finish understand? Now
move" I walked forward but she shoved me
back again this side she's so thin I wonder
where I'll even hit cause once I touch her I break
her bones . Me:"I don't want to fight with you
please, please" Her:"why? I want you to stay
away from my boyfriend understand me?" I nod
and exhaled loudly Me:"I'll stay away from your
boyfriend I'm married anyway" She chuckled
and clapped once. Her:"does Lwazi know about
this?" Me:"how can a husband not know his wife?
Are you sane? Now move out of my way" I
shoved her and she shoved me back she
shouldn't have I just tackled her and pinned her
hands down my knees. Me:"I said move out of

my way are you crazy?" I was busy banging her head on the floor with her screaming her lungs out. Me:"shut the fuck up...listen to me leave Lwazi alone you dig and I'll forgive you for spilling alcohol on me" She pulled her hands out and started scratching me why though bra I lost it and started slapping her I thought of punching her but nah her screams bore me. Me:" I told you don't mess with me understand me?" We started tackling each other on the floor and I don't like being under a girl I make sure I'm always on top throwing real punches and I thought she'd give up but no she continued trying to fight me busy screaming like those Chinese movies LWAZI Senzo:'did you hear that?" Karabo:'what?" Senzo:"screams" Me:"where is Rori and Dimakatso?" They shrug Me:"fuck..." I threw the fork down and ran inside with the others right behind me and guess what Rori was chocking the poor girl i held on her waist and pulled her off but Dimakatso held on

and she was kicked back in the stomach.

Me:"stop it both of you" Rori:"tell that to your girlfriend she spilt alcohol on me"

Dimakatso:"you are lying you bitch" Rori just broke from my clutches and rushed towards Dimakatso but the others shielded her thank God, I pulled her back and tightly gripped on her.

Me:"Dimakatso leave please" Rori:"let go of me Lwazi..." Karabo:"what happened here?" Rorisho was breathing so heavily and trying to break away from my grip Me:"Rori we spoke about this fighting of yours" Rori:"she spilt alcohol on me I'm not drinking but I smell like alcohol and she has the guts to shove me around what do you want me to do? Give her a hug"

Dimakatso:'stop lying you attacked me" Rori:"I didn't attack you just yet tell Lwazi to let go of me and I'll show you how I attack bitches like you" Karabo:"Umh Dimakatso I suggest you bounce " Senzo:"let her stay this will be fun"

Me:"Dimakatso leave please and Rori calm your

ass down before you faint" She mumbled whatever and roughly pulled her hands away from me walking towards Dimakatso who looked scared and I guess that made her laugh. Rori:"look at you all scared nxa how the mighty have fallen" She walked passed them and went to the living room. Me:"one of you walk her out and check on the meat I need to talk to Rori" They nod and I went to my wife who was busy mumbling out of anger I sat down next to her and just hugged her. Me:"I'm sorry" Her:"for what?" Me:"not being there to protect you" Her:"I don't need your protection from your bitches, I can handle them" Me:*but they make you angry" Her:"it's part of life" Me:"look at me please" She turned around and her eyes were so red, so I cupped her face and kissed her I heard her exhale loudly in between the kiss she wrapped her hands around my neck and sat on my lap giving me access to her body, we kissed till she pulled away and bumped heads with me and

sighed. Her:"now I want to drink" Me:"no! Come the others are waiting for us" She kissed me again and moaned in between the kiss, she pulled away and stood up. Her:"I hate you so much" Me:"what did I do?" Her:"I smell like alcohol cause of your bitches" Me:"I'm sorry okay" She took off her jacket and walked out I mean the entire mood was almost ruined by that fight, but things were revived and we had our fun no more surprises

[03/08, 16:05] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . . EPISODE 24 . . .

RORI . . The braai though best moment of my life since I got married to Lwazi I released some steam on some kinky bitch of course I'm proud and even though Lwazi seemed pissed, he started this he should respect me for his bitches to respect me so if I have to beat them to get their respect and his believe me I'll do it and believe me I got the bitche's respect me now they bow at my feet now I mean they

are all quite staring at me. #Roriisboss

Inno:"ahem" I looked at her. Me:'what is it?"

Inno:"what you did in there was not lady like" I chuckled and just clapped my hands shaking my head.

Me:"not lady like? Do I have lady like written on my forehead?" Inno:"no but fighting

for a man is not..." Me:"that man is my husband and if I want to rearrange a bitch's face for

pissing me off then believe me I'll take that lady like thing and trample all over your face,I'm a

lady like that" Funeka:"but still that wasn't

cool....they were dating" Me:"listen to me and I suggest you convey this message to others,

Lwazi Andrew Mkhize is my husband he fucks me and only me so tell your fake ass bitches I'll

give them a ghetto make over capish?" She

rolled her eyes and looked away well I know Bev and Itu are the only girls who actually seem to

like me and the others are just bitches to the core I took a sip of my juice stared at my

husband, yes my husband. He was just turning

the meat so seductively and his laugh though he seems happy with his friends, I saw him stare at me and smiled to see if he winked at me. Iu: "you love him don't you?" I quickly regained myself and changed the subject. Me: "so where did you girls meet the guys?" They laughed and just highfived I shrug and just went back to staring at Lwazi since they won't tell me so I won't inquire again, I mean guys Lwazi is so handsome he maybe be a monster sometimes but he's my handsome monster when he laughs revealing that dimple of his and those white teeth of his I was drooling over him and even when he came towards me I was just staring at him playing with the glass he stood over and kissed my cheek. Lwazi: "you are staring" he whispered I swallowed a chunk of saliva and shook my head. Lwazi: "okay... So how are you? Are you playing nice?" Me: "I'm always nice Lwazi" He looked at the quite girls then at me with a smirk on his face. Me: "im nice they just

don't like talking relax" Lwazi:"I see,want me to get you a beer" I quickly nod he's a real monster cause he just pecked my lips. Lwazi:"not happening" I nod He leaned over and kissed me I responded and pulled on him by his jacket I was moaning between the kiss it felt like it was only the two of us. "Ahem" Lwazi:"mmh" he groaned He slowly pulled away and pecked my lips with a smile on his face. Me:"we are not at home are me?" He shook his head I pushed him away slowly damn I was so embarrassed I wanted to die. Me:"step away from me please" Lwazi:" stand up I'd to seat" Me:"meat needs you" Lwazi:" He pulled me up and then sat down pulled me towards him I sat down on his lap with his hands on my thighs girls you'll die of envy you can stare all you want cause you ain't getting none not while I'm alive. Karabo:"the meat is served" Lwazi:"finally my woman was starving" Me:"so I'm your woman?" He wiggled his eyebrows and kissed my neck. Senzo:"so

Rori" Me:"yes Senzo" Senzo:"so have any names yet for your first baby?" Me:"uh no"

Cumani:"Rolanez" Me:'what does that even mean?" Cumani:"both your names combined"

Me:'I hate it and I'm sure the baby would hate me for giving it such a name" Lwazi:"Lwazi jnr"

Me:"you wish...I'd rather call them nameless"

They all burst out laughing. Karabo:"I'd be like hey wena Nameless get your ass here right now" Lwazi:"but I want the child to have my name" Me:"Lwazibuzo how about that and a girl will be named after me" Lwazi:"no!" Me:'who'll be caring this baby? Me or you?" Lwazi:"you but still I won't have two Rorishos at my house I'm fine with just one" Me:"mmh really?" Lwazi:"yes"

Me:"sure?" Lwazi:"sure Rori...you'll get us kicked out" Me:'this is your house too so let them try it" Karabo:"from now on I'm staying out if your way" Me:"good anybody else?" The guys quickly raised their hands busy laughing Lwazi included we had our food with Lwazi and I busy

giggling at each other busy smooching here and there I mean it when I say if I see his stinking ex giving me attitude I'll rearrange her face right now I know that the girls that were here will never mess with me not in this lifetime mxm having a baby now will just disrupt my reign of terror I love having control of something especially Lwazi's life. You know on every Christmas I go with gogo to church but today we took a morning plane to Cape Town with Karabo and we'll be on the next flight out on the very same day I was wearing a long purple long body hugging dress and some black heels poofed up my Afro and Lwazi's Mexican what what has been calling none stop and he'd give me the phone the entire time I just wish to see this girl then maybe beat her ass up she calls even when we are sleeping and I love my sleep more than anything in this world. 2days back. I was shaken up from my sleep violently I woke up rubbing my eyes. Me:"what do you want?"

Him:"here someone is calling" I yawned. Me:"it's your phone you answer it" I pulled up the covers and he pulled them off. Me:"what?" He shoved the phone in my hand and went back to sleep Me:"hello..." "Where is Andrew?" Me:'ahh you again? Don't you sleep in mexico? Bitch stop calling this late I'm tired my pussy hurts and I'm certainly not in the mood for you so stop calling my husband if you know what's good for you" I hung up and just slapped Lwazi he got up looking at me with half open eyes. Him:"what?" Me:"never wake me up for your bitch again" Him:"I know you can handle her now why did you have to tell her that your pussy burns when we did nothing" I yawned and shrug I pulled up the covers and just laid my head on his chest with him wrapping his arms around me.

PRESENT DAY When the plane landed we the guys carried our bags and we got on a taxi to the house and as always Lwazi's mom just attacked me with a hug. L's mom:"look at you..."

You look so beautiful" Me:"I try ma thank you"
Lwazi:"hello we are here too you know? So stop
cuddling my wife like that" L's mom:"I don't care
if you are here or not....come in dear" She pulled
me inside the house and the boys followed us.
L's mom:"I hope you took my advice" Me:"some
of it ma still working in the next" Karabo:"what
advice?" Lwazi:"yeah what advice?" We sat
down L's mom:"girl stuff" Me:"exactly now keep
out of it..." Karabo:"love potion baba you'll be
sorry" Lwazi:"mmh...ma where is dad and
Mpho?" L's mom:"Mpho is with her husband's
family and your father went to sign of on some
things" . . •TO BE CONTINUED• #Sleepy

[03/08, 16:05] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . . EPISODE 25 . . .

Lwazi . . Rori didn't want to wake up no
matter how much I slapped her. Me:"screw this
Mr nice guy...you fainted cause of water you'll
wake up cause of water" I picked her up and
walked with her to the shower she's going to

wake up whether she likes it or not I turned on the water and just bent her head down for the water to hit her on the back of the neck busy hitting her neck she's going to pay for this my clothes are soaking wet,I tapped her back.

Guess who woke up she was screaming and kicking Me:"shut up you are giving me a headache" She started coughing and throwing up. Her:"Lwazi stop...I...I can't breath" I pumped up the water and just tilted her head up.

Me:"stop fighting me this will make you feel better" [Coughing] Her:"I can't breath" Okay the water in face in saga is just punishment and i stopped once i saw her actually run out of air I switched off the water and tapped her face.

Me:*you faint again I'll beat you awake understand? Get up" She was coughing so roughly I felt bad for chocking her with water I rubbed her back and she was throwing up badly.

Me:"that's what you get for trying to kill yourself" Her:"I'm scared of you....I'm sorry"

Me:"for what exactly? Drinking and smoking, kissing a boy or drinking pills we talked about"
Her:"everything" Me:"get up, I'll take you to bed"
Her:"I'm sorry Lwazi" Me:"want to kill yourself again? I said get out before i change my mind"
She stood up with my help I picked her up and took her to bed she was drowsy like hell I placed her down with her teary face. She'll sleep naked Me:"stop crying now please I mean you wanted to kill yourself no one else" I wiped her tears away and covered her with the blanket.
Me:"do you have a headache?" She nod Me:"you won't take an overdose?" Her:"uh uh" Me:"I'll be back just have to clean up your mess and please stop sucking on your fingers it's creepy"
I got up and went to turn on the water in the shower and went to dispose the water in bathtub, I got her some pills this is so not what I wanted what if she tries killing herself and succeeds next time, I went back to her and shook her up. Me:"drink these" She just pushed

my hand away and went back to sleep whatever I went to switch off the water in the shower and changed into dry clothes and went to bed the moment I got in my wife turned around and hugged me she was shivering though Lwazi why are you evil I hugged her tightly. Me:"you're cold ain't you?" She just tightly gripped on me I just took off my shirt and helped her put it on it was like I was dressing up a little baby, I pulled her in for a hug after that and just laid her head on my chest. Me:' you know I'm trying to stay angry with you for what you did at the party and in the bathroom but it's hard...actually I'm not angry with you anymore and I hate it I want to beat you up so badly but seeing you like this..." Her:"sorry" Me:"go to sleep we'll talk in the morning" Her:"I'm sorry" I kept quiet and tried to sleep I wonder what I would have told her granny if she died I'd be dead too. RORI I woke up with Lwazi tightly grabbing on me I heard what he said last night I got the urge to

throw up and this side Lwazi's grip was tight on my waist if I open my mouth I'll throw up so I began slapping his hands. Him:"huh?" I ripped them apart and ran to the bathroom where I just threw up entire intestines it hurt so bad even my chest was killing me, I'm never doing whatever it is I was doing last night that even got Lwazi sippy like this but all I know is that I made him angry I got up with a spinning headache and it hurt so bad. "Clean up and I'll make you some breakfast" I shook my head and just went to the sink to clean up jeez I felt like an idiot I brushed my teeth and washed my face but why am I crying. Him:"stop crying Rori" Me:"I'm sorry Lwazi I don't even know what I did last night" Him:'you slept with a boy at the party" I turned around to look at him and he kept a straight face no I couldn't have I sobbed my heart out what have I become huh this is not me I don't go around sleeping with people like this. Me:"Lwazi please tell me you are joking....

Please" Him:"look at me Rori I'm just joking you didn't sleep with him, hey calm down" He wrapped his arms around me and rubbed my back how can he play like that though. Him:"it's okay I promise but I just hope you are reborn after you died for a few minutes" Me:"I feel so dirty Lwazi" Him:"power of weed and alcohol but no you don't listen when I say you shouldn't" Me:"I'm so sorry with every fiber of my being" I automatically broke away from the hug and got on my knees . Me:"please don't beat me... I'm sorry I promise to... Actually I swear just don't beat me I'll never ever go against your word" Weird thing he chuckled and just held out his hand for me, I took it and he pulled me up I'm scared and all he can do is smile at me God he'll kill me,he wiped my tears away and attempted kissing me but I pushed him away and just threw up in the sink. Him:"I'll make us some breakfast okay?" I shook my head and spit. Me:"I'm not hungry I just want to sleep"

Him:"then let's go to bed" Me:"why are you doing this?" He smiled and picked me up honeymoon style. Him:"you are my drunkard of a wife what else can I do? Now you need to eat something before you can drink the headache pills" Me:"I'm not hungry" Him:"for me please just say yes and I'll whip up something for you quick quick" Me:"but I'm not hungry" Him:"an Apple" Me:'you are not going to give up are you?" He shook his head,so i nod and he got off the bed leaving me to harness my headache I was dosing off and the guy came back with a bowl of fruit salad. him:"get up and eat" Me:"you said an Apple" Him:"the weather report said partly cloudy but look outside it's hot so in life we lie now get up and eat" Me:"i want my apple" Him:"sit up straight" I sat up straight and tried to actually digest the food but everything felt so bitter I pushed the dish away from me. Him:"swallow that" I shook my head and he just caught my face and pinched my cheeks.

Him:"swallow right now" I swallowed with my eyes closed cause everything felt so bitter after the swallowing he kissed my cheek.

Him:"your withdrawal symptoms are annoying"

Me:"what withdrawal symptoms? I'm not a drug addict you know" Him:"so you say drink the

pills" He took the salad and just left I swallowed

the pills I hope this headache stops cause it's killing me right now, I got in the blanket and

tried falling asleep Lwazi got into bed and

wrapped his arms around me I know it's him

cause he smells so heavenly that's his cologne

heavenly what what. I just curled myself up in

his arms and dosed off peace and quite in

Lwazi's arms amazing I tell you just amazing

and I know I don't have to worry about him

snoring he's quite when he's asleep you'd think

there is no one there my Christmas was shit I

tell you just shit at least he forgave me

[03/09, 07:34] Mk: My handsome monster-

Our holy matrimony . . . Episode 26 . .

LWAZI I was woken up by my loud phone and poor Rori was feeling the burn cause she has a hangover, she was busy groaning. Me:" I'm sorry rest up okay..." I took my phone and answered I wonder what Karabo wants Me:"yeah" Him:"are you still sleeping?" Me:"yeah it's boxing day" Him:'or you are nursing your wife's hangover" Me:"that too" Him:"get your ass here and open the door" Me:"how did you get past security?" Him:"just get down here" Me:"fine I'll be there" I hung up and just got out of bed. "Where are you going?" Me:"shouldn't you be sleeping?" Her:'I don't feel your arms around me anymore" Me:"well I'm going downstairs I'll be back so rest up" Her:'you are not leaving for two more weeks?" I put on my pants with a smile on my face. Me:"no I can't go around half naked" She was dosing off but still wanted to keep tabs on me Her:"will you come back?" Me:'yeah sure now sleep" I rubbed her forehead and walked out i went to open for Karabo who just barged

in. Me:"what's wrong with you?" He sat down I sat on the couch facing the stairs Me:"what's going on?" Him:"tell me you dealt with her" Me:"dealt with her? What do you mean?" Him:"you know exactly what I mean...she behaved like a bitch last night" Me:'so? I'm not going to lay a hand on my wife" Him:"are you crazy? What are you waiting for?" Me:"she almost killed herself okay" Him:'what do you mean almost? What stopped her?" Me:" I did" Him:"are you crazy? Lwazi you don't need her anymore that would have been great cause she committed suicide" Me:"no I'm not going to kill my wife" Him:"Lwazi i thought we agreed that you won't catch feelings what's wrong with you? Why can't you stick to the rules" Me:"Karabo killing your first wife might have been easy for you but I'm not like you I can't kill the same person I have sex with" Him:'but it was easy for you to kill Dimakatso and get her friend ran over by a car?" Me:"I did all of that for her okay but

I'm not going to kill her" Him:"if you don't do it I will" Me:"if you dare touch.." I saw Rori at the top of the stairs she had her hand over her mouth with tears streaming down her cheeks. Me:'Rori please..." She ran back to the room. Me:"you better stay away from my wife Karabo, you'll be sorry. Get out" Him:"this catching feelings stuff will be the death of you" Me:"I don't care now bounce you and I will only talk about the heists" He stood up all red and I went to open for him now I have to change the house passwords just in case cause once Karabo wants to kill he'll want to till he has, I took a deep breath and walked upstairs. RORI I just heard my husband plotting to kill me I couldn't believe it I was sitting on the floor hugging my legs sobbing silently I didn't mean to disrespect him I thought he forgave me for last but clearly he didn't I'm scared like crazy i can't run away this house is seriously hard to get out off and hard to get in too. The moment

the door opened I just sprung up and ran to the side of the mirror. Me:"please Lwazi don't kill me please" He tried moving towards me but I kept on moving back and he stopped with his hands raised up. Him:"I'd never do that to you Rori I'm scared of losing you to another guy why would I kill you" Me:"I'm sorry...." Him;"I forgave you and no matter how angry I get I'll never hurt you"Me:'I heard you and Karabo talking" Him:"I won't do it" I sobbed my heart out while moving back. Me:"you killed Dimakatso..and you...you got Leroy hit by a car" Him:"I did that cause of you....I was doing it for you" Me:"No! No" I shouted Him:" okay I was angry but at the fact that they made you angry" Me:"you kill people... You kill people" Him:"I was doing it for you" he shouted "it was all for you I wanted to see you smile" Me:' now you want to kill me... Lwazi please don't" Him:"I'd never do that please believe me" Me:"why?" He kept quiet scratching his head. Him:"cause I love you" Me:"what?"

Him:" I love you Rori there i said it" Me:"you still want to kill me?" He got on his knees Him:'I promise you I'd never even think of killing you I mean I want you to carry my children no one else" I saw tears slowly roll down his cheeks this can't be happening he can't be crying for me or maybe he's trying to fool me well I won't fall for it. Me:"I want to go home Lwazi" Him:"I'm sorry but you can't, Karabo is still angry" Me:"but..." Him:"no Rori you can't go now" Me:"if you love me like you say you do then let me go home" Him:"he'll hurt you Rori I can't let that happen" Me:"i don't feel safe here,I don't feel safe with you" Him:"you are safe here with me" I just melted down and hugged my legs again I was shaking I felt like I was going crazy when he wrapped his arms around me. Him:"I'll protect you, I meant every word in my vows" Me:'your elder brother wants to kill me" Him:"I'll speak to him and he won't" Me:'how sure are you? Lwazi I'm too beautiful to die" He chuckled

Him:'it's I'm too young to die not beautiful'
Me:"I'm sorry about last night I didn't mean to"
He kissed my head and just pulled me towards
him. Him:"it was your first and last mistake,so
it's cool" Me:"did you mean it?" Him:"what?"
Me:'when you said the L word did you mean it?'
Him:"what L word? Can't you say it?" Me:"when
you said you love me" Him:"no I just wanted to
get close to you so that I can kill you" He rolled
me over and started tickling me. Me:"Lwazi my
tummy hurts stop" Him:"I love you okay" I nod
Him:"don't you love me?" I shook my head and
he sulked. Me:"stop tickling me" Him:"hungover
still?" Me:'uh uh just hungry" Him:" you'll
swallow your food?' Me:"I'm not a baby you
know so get off me" Him:'but you act like one
when you are drunk" He pecked my lips and got
off me he helped me stand up. Me:'carry me to
the kitchen" Him:'only time I'll carry you
somewhere is if we are going to have sex there'
Me:"what's with you and sex?" Him:'what do you

mean? That is one of God's greatest creations which I love" Me:"you are a troubled person"
Him:"especially if I have a booty like yours"
Me:"please leave me alone I'm still stuck on the fact that you wanted to kill me" Him:"I'm not going to kill you" Me:'feed me first then you can kill me" I sat down Him:'you should be making me food as my wife" Me:"Lwazi I'm sick"
Him:"how sick?" Me:"truly sick so make me a sandwich" Him:"what would you like"
Me:"anything called a sandwich" He nod and went about making us food half naked and to piss me off he just spilt mustard sauce on himself he turned around with a frown on his face. Him:"look at me I'm dirty" Me:"don't care"
Him:'come wipe this off" Me:"wipe it yourself"
Him:"Rori" Me:"fine come I'll wipe it" He walked in front of me and I took the napkin but he moved back. Me:"what?" Him:"lick it off" Me:"I should have known why are you always horny"
He shrug and just walked in front me so he held

on my head as I licked the mustard off his abs to his bare chest and up his chin to his lips which i quickly pulled away from. Me:"im hungry you know" Him:"what if I spill mustard on myself again?" Me:'you'll use a napkin now please hurry up with the food and I'm not thinking about sex right now" Him:"and why is that?" Me:" my pussy hurts from last night" Him:"oh yeah I forgot your drunk initiation" Me:"so it has a name, drunk intiatiion okay" Him:"but you are so wild when you are drunk" Me:"and I'm ignoring you right now" He placed the plate in front of me and got us some Apple juice and that is in the white wine bottle just Apple juice he's so not a great husband right there but I guess after I pop a baby for him I can drink all I want and still be a mom but I'm not ready.

[03/09, 07:34] Mk: ♡ My handsome monster
- Our holy matrimony . . . Episode 27☆ . .

Lwazi said he loves me but I'm skeptical after what I heard his brother wants to kill me and that's not cool at all and from what I have seen Lwazi looks up to his older brother and that could mean only one thing,he'll do anything to make him happy. We were done taking a shower an innocent one for that matter but we kissed, when we got out of the shower he picked me up and walked with me to the bedroom I holding on for dear life with my legs tightly locked around his waist. Me:"so your arm doesn't hurt anymore?" Him:"nah it's fine now" Me:"no wonder you like carrying me" He laid me in the bed and got in between my legs.

Me:"Lwazi uh uh" Him:"what? I'm not going to do what you think I want to do" Me:" what are you doing then" He shrug and kissed my tummy going down on me parting my legs apart he kissed my inner thigh and soon his tongue was

doing the twirls and flips in me I arched my back gasping for air causing him to pull me down a bit holding tightly to my thighs I could feel his nails sink in to my flesh as the nigga ate me up, he had me screaming my lungs out pushing his head deeper in. Me:"I..I love you... Ahhh" I came right after that and he licked me clean he got in between my legs and pecked my lips. Him:"you said what!" Me:"I..I'm about to come" Him:"I'd do anything for you Rori anything at all" I wrapped my arms his neck and ran my fingers up and down his neck, we were staring in each other's eyes. Me:"i know and I'd do just about anything for you and to make you happy" Him:"then have my baby please" Me:"I'd love to carry your baby but what about school? I'm even scared of how I'll treat the baby" Him:"but we don't know what tomorrow holds and I want to have something that I share with you I want to be able to say that I have a family that I'm a man and who has a family now"

Me:"are you a woman now?" He slapped my thigh. Him:"you know I always wanted a baby"
Me:"who doesn't want a baby? But I'm scared Lwazi what if I'm a bad mother" Him:"then I'll be the worst father ever but we'll be together"
Me:"yeah that's if Karabo doesn't kill me". He kissed my forehead . Him:"I'd rather kill him"
Me:"you'd do that for me" Him:"I love you and my brother can't give it to me like you' Me:'I give it to you good?" He smirked and nod Him:"better than any bitch I have been with' Me:"he had to compare me" Him:"cause you are the best for me" Me:"and you for me" Him:"let's get dressed before you freeze" Me:"can I wear your shirt again?" He shook his head and stood up he helped me stand up and we put on our body lotion and i wore his gray Nike shorts they were baggy and my sports bra and Lwazi's blue Nike jersey I tied my braids into a messy bun and Lwazi wore black sweatpants with a gray long sleeve shirt and his Adidas push ins. Him:"my

clothes though" Me:"i love them" Him:"and they love you too" I smiled and just pecked his lips. Me:"let's go watch empire" Him:"no" Me:"please baba" Him:'promise not to drool over those guys". Me:"you drool over those girls too" Him:"I don't watch such shit" Me:"please I want motivation" Him:"for what?" Me:"its a secret" He gave me a puppy face. Him:"please tell me" I shook my head and walked out, he was right behind me busy begging me to tell him we watched Empire busy cuddling and just arguing about lame songs you'd be surprised how much he knows about hip hop even though he ain't a fan. We got disturbed by a knock when we were watching teen Wolf I hate being disturbed when I was still enjoying being in Lwazi's arms. He stood up and went to open just to find his brother and his goons I literally jumped out of the couch. Lwazi:"babe go upstairs" I nod and turned around. Karabo:"he won't hide you forever" I literally ran after that i went to our

room and locked myself in the bathroom.

LWAZI After Rori disappeared into the bedroom had karabo pinned against the door.

Me:'if you ever talk to my wife like that ever again I...I...I swear to God I'll kill you" The guys pulled me away from him I quickly yanked myself from them. Me:"what do you want?"

Karabo:" you know exactly what we want...that bitch of yours remember the bitch I picked for you" Me:"I told you stay out of my life, my marriage and Rori" Dre:"you are supposed to have her eliminated" Me:'shut up you ain't married now ya'll butt out of my marriage".

Karabo:"listen to me she will tarnish your name and you know the rules" Me:'screw rules"

Karabo:'it doesn't work like that little brother it doesn't and now you are no longer arranged you are in love with her,what the hell is wrong with you" Me:'forget that, now why are you here?"

Senzo:"we got a job for you" Me:"I don't do jobs alone and you know it" Karabo:"think 11 million

rands" Me:"no I'm not leaving my wife alone"

Karabo:'let's go to the family crib"

Me:"whatever... I'll be back" I stood up and ran upstairs i didn't find Rori in the bedroom.

Me:"mini me where are you?" "In the bathroom"

Me:"come to me" "Uh uh please dont kill me"

Me:'mini me come please" I heard her unlock the door all red eyed. Me:"I won't kill you mini

me I promise" Her:"promise to protect me" Me:"I promise, listen I have to go but I'll be back"

Her:'please don't go" Me:'I don't want these guys here any longer understand, I'll be back" I

put on my sneakers and just kissed her forehead. Me:"I love you" Her:"I love you too"

Me:"now stop crying, I'll be back before you know it" She nod but she was shaking with fear

I had to leave her I had to i walked downstairs

Me:"where is Dre?" Karabo:"he's outside taking a call" Me:'let's go then" We walked out and

went to the family house. RORI As soon as I saw them walk out I took a breath of relief and

just took my cellphone and headphones walking downstairs maybe I'll feel better I just threw myself on the couch and switched on the TV put on my headphones and just closed my eyes trying to get some rest before I die plus my body was killing me so I need this. I was so relaxed and dozed off when I felt hands running up my thighs slowly Me:"uh uh" He continued moving them up. Me:"Lwazi stop it...stop" When he ripped my vest only did I open my eyes only to find that it was not Lwazi it was that creppy friend of his I sat up straight cause I couldn't run. Me:'what... What are you doing?" Him:"just carrying out an order but first I'm going to enjoy myself" I shook my head moving back and the moment I was up straight I pushed him to fall on his back hitting I stood up but he held my leg causing me to fall flat on my face. Me:"no stop it" I kicked my leg out and tried crawling away from him but he was there. Him:"hold still this will only take a few minutes" He flipped me over

and sat on top of me busy trying to grab on to my hands which I was busy scratching on his face. Me:"stop it... Stop please I'm begging you"
Him:"why are you begging me to stop? You'll die anyway" Me:'please don't ..." He slapped me and just caught my hands. Him:"hold still you bitch, this will all be over in a few I promise"
Me:"No please I won't tell Lwazi I'll keep quite please" He chuckled and just licked my cheek with a smile on his face, I could smell him and felt his lips on my neck as he began kissing me, I begged him to stop I was screaming my lungs out I was kicking but he didn't stop he kept on roughly kissing my neck. Him:"shh I won't hurt you I'll be gentle" . I shook my head with tears streaming down my face the headache I thought I had just came back. Me;"please... No"
I tried pushing him away the moment he let go of me but I couldn't he was busy giggling when he kissed my tummy i felt so dirty like a piece of trash I was crying silently all powerless

what's the use I'm going to die anyway I'll die dirty as hell and maybe that's where I'll go to hell. But why could Lwazi do this to me why didn't he just rape me and kill me himself and not send anyone else to do his dirty work I closed my eyes and said a little prayer by heart the moment I felt him try to pull off my shorts I just kicked him back he'll have to kill me first cause he ain't having it easy, I got on my knees and tried crawling to the stairs but he caught me and just pulled me by the hair I began scratching his hand and he had to wrap his hand around my neck choking me. Him:"you bitch I said stop fighting me" I clawed at his hands but I don't have long nails it was like I was rubbing his hand I kept on coughing and I even got a nose bleed I'm dying ain't I, I'm really dying but what did I do to Karabo what did I do to him though. I was getting a bit dizzy when I heard a gun shot followed by two more his grip around my neck got loose and i could

breath again I slowly pulled myself from him and the moment I was free I looked behind me and I found Lwazi standing there gun still pointed at me I moved back on the stairs still sitting down busy shaking my head. Me: "Lwazi please don't...I.. I'll do anything you want just don't kill me I'll go back home and forget about this" It was like I woke him up from a trance cause the moment he saw that he had a gun pointed at me he quickly put it behind him and ran to me Him: "are you okay? Rori listen to me are you okay?" I nod busy hugging myself someone is dead right in front of me but they wanted to kill me first. Him: "did he do this to you?" I nod still clutching on my chest Lwazi just took out his phone with one hand over my shoulder pulling me closer to him. Him: "I think you left something at my house one strike two more left and it'll be me and you big brother" He hung up and made another call this one was about cleaning up and stuff I was shaking

uncontrollably. Him:"go take a shower it'll make you feel better" I shook my head and held on to him Him:"I'll be here im not going anywhere" I shook my head burying my head in his chest I couldn't stop crying I could smell that guy on top of me he freaked me out. Him:"Rori please babe" Me:'uh uh don't force me please,please don't leave me" Him:"I'll be right outside the shower door then, I'll be right there" Me:"he's all over me, his scent" Him:"I'm so sorry love, come" Me:"what about him?" Him:"my guys will be here now let's go" He stood up and helped me stand but I couldn't I just fell down again my knees were wobbly from fear Lwazi just picked me up and got into the shower clothes on and all he took off my bra and I was just standing there like a statue looking at the wall with him behind me he took off every piece of clothing and then his. Him:"look at me" I turned around with tears flowing down my face, he just kissed my forehead and hugged me I sank to the floor I

could say we sat in the shower for hours with Lwazi behind me hugging me and I was laying my head on his chest quite as can be with the water splashing us. Him:"no will ever hurt you again understand me? I promise you that I'll fight with my own brother for you" I just stared into space as I saw that guy over me his sloppy lips all over me I felt like vomiting and before I could entertain the thought I actually threw up but after I was still a statue I kept on crying silently and Lwazi was hugging me as tightly as he could we sat in the shower till we turned white and wrinkled but I still felt dirty when we got out I couldn't stop throwing up I didn't even talk to Lwazi nor did I wear any clothes I just got into bed with the bathroom robe and curled myself up on the bed he was rubbing my back telling me everything will be okay but how I didn't disagree with him I cried and I cried till I had no more tears but I was still crying and crying and crying

[03/09, 07:34] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . EPISODE 29 . . .

RORI I always thought nothing can bring me down I thought I could handle every little thing thrown at me but I can still smell him, see him hovering over me his breath on my neck the gun shots,turning around to find Lwazi with a gun in hand pointed at me everything from that day everything is still there everything feels so real like I'm still there. I woke up just to find myself in Lwazi's arms and in the most depressing room a hospital room I began slapping Lwazi's thigh to wake him up I just want to go home I can't be here anymore I might go crazy. Me:"wake up please" He opened his eyes with a weird smile on his face Him:"hey...how are you feeling?" Me:"I want to go home Lwazi" Him:"you'll go when the doctor..." Me:'Lwazi take me home now" Him:"stop being stubborn you'll go home when you are discharged" Me:"I just want to go home

how is that being stubborn?" Him:"the doctor hasn't discharged you yet" Me:"make him discharge me please I just want to go home". Him:"but.." Me:"please I just want to be in my own bed" Him:"I'll see what i can do but things will change around the house" Me:"what now?" Him:"no more starving yourself and the baby" Me:"can I just go home before you breath rules down my throat?" He kissed my forehead and got off the bed he leaned over to kiss me but I blocked him. Me:"no kissing" Him:"fuck that" He pushed my hand away and leaned over to kiss me and when his lips met mine we slowly and passionately kissed when we kiss we never want to stop that's why I think it's best we don't kiss in public. "Ahem" See what I mean we always get caught in the act. He slowly pulled away and pecked my lips he stood up straight and gave the doctor his attention I hate having to fake a smile of embarrassment. Doc:"good morning" Lwazi:"morning doctor" Doc:"how are

you feeling Rorisho?" He was busy taking my bp

Me:"like sh...I'm fine doctor can I go home now?" He looked at Lwazi then at me. Me:"I'm not joking I want to go home" Doc:'well that's a bit tricky cause well we have a problem".

Me:"you can just sign the release forms and I'm out" Lwazi:"Listen" I rolled my eyes and

followed my arms. Me:"what is it?" The doctor looked really nervous. Doc:"well there is a

problem with the.. Umh we discovered that you have a scratched womb which means there is a possibility that you can't carry the baby to term"

The poor doctor looked pretty nervous and the look in Lwazi's eyes freaked me out this is what I hate about life mxm I'm not meant to be happy

I turned around and laid on my side I pulled the blanket up. Lwazi:"what the fuck? You said

everything was fine what happened to that?"

Doc:"Mr Mkhize there is something we can do

it's just a scratch" Lwazi:"A scratch my foot y'all better make sure my wife and child are okay"

Doc:"sir we can but with your help we'll put her on a five month pill period but no stressing and over working her,she needs to eat healthy and a few exercises" Lwazi:'and how is that going to help?" Doc:'the pills will repair the scratch the she'll carry the baby to term but if only she follows the rules" Hearing them talk about me like I'm not there just freaks me out i hate it.

Me:"i wanna go home" Doc:"we have to run a few tests" Me:'let me go home... Is that so much? I just want to go home" Doc:"of course but we have to run a few tests before then I'll let you go_" Lwazi:"how many tests do you have to run?" Doc:'just taking a blood sample and a sonar" Lwazi tried holding my hand but I pulled it away. Doc:"well I'll be back" Lwazi:"okay" The doctor took his note pad and walked out. I was left with the angry Lwazi but when he looked at me he seemed scared he seemed lost Him:'he'll be fine" Me:"I hope you are happy now.... Lwazi I'm not meant to be a mother" Him:'that's not

true you heard what the doctor said he can solve this" Me:"you don't know that for sure,he doesn't know that either" Him:"have faith that's all I'm asking for" Me:"i don't even know what that means anymore all I want to do is to go home" Him:"and you will" I wanted to cry but I couldn't i didn't want to or is it I didn't have the energy to be crying right now Lwazi will cry for me. Him:"can I make a quick phone call?". Me:"don't leave me please" Him:"just a few minutes I'll be back, im right out there okay" I slowly nod and he kissed my forehead. I was left alone to reflect on my life I mean I haven't done anything wrong to anyone but why me why can't I be happy just once in life just once I thought my dark days were over now I have a scratch or crack whatever it is I got I know I didn't want a baby but it's here now and I can't survive even going on my periods so how will I survive the blood that will be my child God if there was a time i needed you the most it'd be

now more than ever i had my eyes closed and that's when i felt someone touch my cheek wiping it i opened my eyes and found Lwazi standing over me. Him:"you crying again?" Me:'is that a question or statement?" Him:"both anyway we'll find your family at the house" Me:"really? Lwazi I just wanted to go home and rest not answer unending questions". Him:"sorry but I just thought you'd feel better when you see your grandma" Me:"you know i hate worrying her but whatever right?" Him:'yep whatever and we'll have to buy some..." Me:'you'll go alone" The doctor walked in with another nurse I thought he'd be taking my blood not my entire body. Doc:"well we'll take a few blood samples and then we are done" Lwazi:"and she can go home?" Doc:"of course" Well I was pinched and poked he did whatever he wanted to me then we had a sonar and Lwazi had a lot of questions for the doctor about the baby and what not he looked really

excited to even hear the heart beat. When the doctor was done I went to change into the jeans and white T-shirt with a denim jacket and sneakers then I was done I smell like the hospital. I found Lwazi busy talking with the doctor and i just stood next to him and i got the pills,release forms and I was free of the hospital he even opened the door for me. Me:"thanks" He got into his side. Me:"I get that you invited people at the house but what will they eat cause nobody is there to cook for them?" Him:"we'll go past the shisanyama and buy something but you should teach your family to carry lunch boxes when they come for a visit" Me:"you teach them since you invited them" Him:"that was a joke so just please laugh" I faked a laugh and stared at him. Me:"happy?" Him:'you look ugly when you are sulking" Me:"don't I always... Now go buy the food" Him:'what would you like?" Me:"uh to go home" Him:"you are sour jeez I'll be back" I waved at him and just

focused on my phone I hate answering his phone but when it rings I just have to so I was forced to answer it and it was from a private number. Me:"Lwazi's phone hello" Caller:"why do you always answer Andrew's phone" Me:'oh come on Mexican potato what do you want?" I heard her mumble a few things I don't care really. Me:"so what do you want?" Her:"where is Andrew?" Me:"I ate him up" Her:"tell him to call me" Me:"for what and who and why?" Her:"just tell him that I'll be in SA very soon" I exhaled loudly Me:"piece of advice if I were you I'd stay away from Lwazi cause I'm really not in a good mood for his exes so asemblief Mexican chilli stay away understood?" I hung up and just sat back waiting for the husband which came back with great smelling food just made me want to eat everything up. He placed the plastic bags in the back. Me:"wants in there?" Him:"food" Me:"can I taste?" Him:"no...now what were you doing with my phone?". Me:"your girlfriend

called" Him:'who?" Me:'how many do you have?'
He squinted his eyes with furrowed brows
Me:"I'm going to sit at the back" Him:"why? You
hate the back seat" Me:"I love it now... "
Him:"don't even try me" Me:"Lwazi!" Him:"what?"
Me:"I'm hungry" Him:'so?" Me:"mxm forget
you...but what did you buy?" Him:"you'll see
when we get home" Me:"you such a bore" He
nod and then his phone rang come on he
decided to give it to me. Me:"I'm not your
receptionist you know" Him:'I'm giving you a job
come on" I answered the phone staring at Lwazi.
Me:"Lwazi's phone hello" Caller:'jeez bitch why
are you always answering this phone don't you
have your own?" Me:"oh it's you...and to answer
your question it's because I own him"
Caller:"wish you could die" Me:" get in line
bitch you'll find the whole of jozi there"
Caller:"just give Andrew the phone" Me:'just
jump of the Mexican mountain and die that's if
you have one" Caller:'what's..." Me:'if only I had

time to chit chat I would but I have to be a wife neh so listen and this is the last time I say this, leave Lwazi alone and stay away from him when you are in SA capish?" Caller:'just..."

Me:"good" I hung up and held on to the phone. I looked at Lwazi who was busy chuckling and shaking his head. Me:"what?" Him:"you own me?" Me:"duh ain't it obvious? You own me and I own you" Him:"I see" Me:"were you blind? For us to say it's a miracle!" He chuckled and just parked outside the gate Him:'I understand" I kept quiet and looked outside as he drove into the yard. Him:"so" Me:"what?" Him:"what's your come back line to that" Me:"to what?" Him:'I understand" I got out of the car and walked to the door. Me:"are you crazy? Do I have a come back book or manual book of come backs? Where was I to come back" Him:"its settled I have a crazy wife is that how you talk to your husband? Get in please" Me:"you should carry me inside according to law" Him:"who told you

that?" Me:"the... Oh hello family" My sisters ran to me and wrapped their arms around me. To be continued lovia

[03/09, 07:34] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . . Episode 29

#continues . . I was still hugged so tightly by my sisters we fight but we get along very well.

Lwazi:"okay detach yourselves now she can't breathe" We broke the hug and I walked towards

my granny and hugged her. Me:"hello gogo wam" Gogo:"thank God you are alright"

Me:"yeah just needed a wake up call that's all"

Lwazi came back from the kitchen with my sisters holding food and drinks and oh my so called parents were here too but screw them I

just sat down on the two seater couch and

Lwazi came to seat next to me. Winter:"so how are you feeling?" Me:'umh I'm fine just a bit

tired" Gogo:'what happened? I hope you didn't

try to kill yourself again" Lwazi:'again? She tried killing herself?" I'm dead right now gogo didn't

have to say that I fixed myself up. Me:'umh so gogo how are you doing at home?" Lwazi:"don't try to block my question" Me:"I'm not now let's forget it" I forced a smile this shouldn't have came out now I have to tell Lwazi that I have always been suicidal I even got diagnosed for some depression stuff due to child neglect and feeling not needed by my parents doctor's words not mine I'm suicidal so what everyone is sometimes I was getting weird vibes from Lwazi the entire day and I know I'll have to answer his questions once the family leaves which I wish they don't I don't want them to leave me with this monster they have unleashed. Lwazi told gogo about the pregnancy and all it's problems I didn't actually feel like breaking my heart like that again. Gogo:"You'll carry this baby to term Rori understand me? This Sunday I want you two at church" Lwazi:"umh Sundays are a problem for me" Gogo:"you'll cancel all your problems and come to church with your

wife" Tshepi:"I'll also be there for you" Me:"umh thanks can you guys excuse me I'm tired"
Gogo:"of course and don't forget your Bible" I stood up and took the Bible and went to my room I don't mean to be rude but this baby talk actually freaks me out I don't want to imagine that I might just lose a life I changed into my pj's and took my Bible and read from the book of Matthew 11 I don't know why but I just felt like reading the whole thing over and over again after a said a prayer and then got into bed with the Bible on my tummy I actually miss being a bad girl a rebel I'd go to church the next day to confess my sins and I'd feel better but now everything seems to be going South rather than North and I hate the pace it's going at but life is like that full of surprises. . LWAZI After Rori's family left I went upstairs to check on Rori but I found her dead and gone with sleep holding tightly to her Bible I took the blanket and covered her with it I took the Bible and

placed it aside I took my laptop and walked downstairs now it's time to tell my mom about this. I called her up and it didn't take long before she answered with a smile on her face since she's always on her laptop. Me:"allo KitKat" She gave me a stern look and smiled. Her:"just because you are married doesn't mean I can't smack you in the face" Me:"haa KitKat" She chuckled. Her:"what do you want Catnap?" Me:"wow you just had to call me that... How are you though?" Her:"I'm good but you look like a dead person where is that spark of having a wife?" Me:"it's there ma" I exhaled loudly I know it's not there at all. Her:"what's wrong love you know you can tell me anything" Me:"mama Rori is pregnant" She beamed with joy you could see it in her face. Her:"then why the long face? You should be happy shouldn't you?" I sighed Me:"it's not that easy mama appearantly she has a scratched womb and there is a possibility she won't carry the baby to term" Her:" im so

sorry love but do you know what caused this?" I shook my head Me:"my only thought at that time was to get her out of there since she wanted to" Her:"well everything is going to be alright I promise" Me:"ma you don't know that neither of us do I'm so scared of what will happen to Rori if we lose this baby" Her:"please don't cry the baby is still there right?" I nod and sniffed Her:"good now I suggest you wipe those tears away and go get a second opinion where is Nolwazi anyway?" They named her Nolwazi at our traditional wedding Me:"she's sleeping" Her:"be there for her okay she'll need you now more than ever understand me?" Me:"yes mama" Her:"and look whose eavesdropping on our conversation... Hello Nono" I looked behind me and saw Rori with a faint smile on her face. Rori:"hello ma" She sat down next to me. Ma:"how are you truthfully?" Rori:"I feel much better than I was in the morning" Ma:"you look pale sweetie you know everything will be fine

understand? You will be fine" I just gave her the laptop since they will not notice my presence anyway. Me:'can I get you anything?" Rori:"just some custard and jelly" Ma:"so much sweet stuff?" Rori:"I need it ma" I walked away from them and went to get Rori her request this is me being supportive I took my time in the kitchen cause they were having fun busy laughing and stuff the moment I went back to the living room Rori was closing the laptop I guess they got tired of gossiping about me. Me:"here you go need anything else?" She shook her head. Me:"okay I'll be in the study" Her:"why are you avoiding me?" I sighed and just sat down next to her. Me:"I'm not avoiding you I thought you'd want to be left alone that's all" Her:"can you stay with me please" Me:'yeah sure umh can I get you anything else?" Her:"seat your ass down asemblief" I chuckled and sat down behind her and she laid her head on my chest. Me:"hand me my laptop" Her:"you better

not be working" Me:"what do you think feeds you? I have to work" She literally shoved the laptop at me. Her:"what's you doing?" Me:"calling Mpho" Her:"why?" Me:"shut up and listen" She clicked her tongue and went about eating you'd think she'd move but she was still on my chest. Mpho answered in her pj's Me:"hi big sis" Mpho:"hey what do I owe this pleasure of your call?" Me:"I need you to talk to your brother he's gone crazy" Her:"what did he do this time around?" Me:"he's blood thirsty again" Her:"Lwazi I told you to stay out of this" Me:"are we going to talk about the past or will you help me? Can't you twist the rules a bit?" Her:"you know I can't umh it's either she is killed or does the test" Me:"umh Mpho I can't let her do any of those that stupid test requires endurance" Mpho:"if only you listened to me from the word go...umh I'll talk to Eric and see what I can do but if he can't help she'll have to come and live with me for her training" Me:"Mpho she's

pregnant come on" Mpho:"don't tell Karabo understand I'll talk to him but if it fails then she comes here" Me:"I..." Rori:"y'all are talking and talking about me like I'm not here..why don't you ask yourselves what I want?" Mpho:"what do you want?" Rori:"for you Mkhize siblings to stop treating me like a yoyo that is stuck and you are trying to fix it" Me:"that's not what we are doing Rori it's for your protection" Rori:"protection my behind nxa" She stood up and left me and Mpho in awe. Me:"please talk to Eric okay" Mpho:"okay take care" Me;"same to you" I closed my laptop and went to the kitchen were I found Rori leaning against the sink. Me:"was that really necessary?" Her:"don't start please I'm not going to a foreign land to train or what not" Me:"you'll be safe there" Her:"are you crazy? Are you freaking fucking me here?" Me:"I'm not really I'll fuck you if you want?" She slapped me so hard for the first time I felt her hand in the aggressive way. Her:"you better think again if

you think I'll leave my family here for your shit understand me" Me:"firstly ouch and secondly it's just in case" Her:"let him kill me cause I'll kill him myself" Me:"but it'll do you good being there I mean what will you be doing here the entire year?" Her:"what I do best draw or write some...umh I'll be fine" Me:"what will you write?" She just walked away from me so I followed her and now she was holding her skull diary if they said having many diaries makes you a millionaire then we are rich cause she has loads of them around the house I snatched it away. Her:"give me that" I lifted my hand up. Me:"what's in here?" Her:"none of your business now gimme" Me:"umh verse one..pre hook...hook,wait these are lyrics?" Her:"I dunno" Me:"murder on a vine... Who sings this song?" Her:"gimme that and stop with the questions Lwazi" Me:"tell me first" Her:"if you must know I wrote them myself now give it to me" Me:"you are a lyricists?" Her:"no I'm a girl what type of

thing is a lyricist? Give me my diary" I chuckled and sat next to her. Me: "I have a lyricist in my house tell me you can rap too" Her: "just give me what's mine asemblief" She snatched the diary away and locked it now I see why she buys the diaries with locks I'd like to hear her rap one day but I'm sure it's not happening today she's angry as hell all I could do was sit there holding her tightly no words uttered.

[03/09, 07:34] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . Episode 30 . .

RORI I spent the whole day with Lwazi being all lovey dovey but he left at about 7pm cause he had something to fix at the club if that's the truth I thought the thunder storm was just passing or else I wouldn't have let him go Lord knows im afraid of the stupid rumbling sounds and lighting I couldn't sleep and this side I'm all alone. My phone rang and it was on the headboard while I was hiding behind the bed hugging my knees I reached over and took

the phone and answered without looking at the caller. Me:"he...hell..hello" ??:"hey it's Leroy... Are you okay?" Me:"uh uh" Leroy:"it's okay nothing will hurt you... It's just some silly thunderstorm remember that" Me:"I'm so scared" Leroy:"get your diary and start writing okay.... Close your eyes and breath in and out" Me:"okay.." I closed my eyes and the moment it rumbled i screamed and threw the phone away I can't close my eyes the thunderstorm freaks me out and I keep on getting flashbacks of that Dre or whatever's face. Why am I suffering like this when I have a husband I crawled to my phone and crawled back to my position I dialed his number and on the third ring he picked up. Me:"come back " Him:"what?" Me:"please I'm scared... Lwazi I'm scared please" Him:"woah relax... Listen to me there is nothing there the guards would have told me" Me:" please....please " Him:"okay im on my way just try to relax" Me:"hurry up" He hung up on

me and left me to cry like someone beat me I was rocking myself back and forth humming a hymn my granny used to do when I was still growing up i don't know for how long i waited for Lwazi but it seemed like a lifetime. The moment I felt his presence in the room I lifted my head. Him:"hey what's wrong? Why are you crying?" He sat down next to me and hugged me. Him:"it's just a thunderstorm Rori it won't harm you" Me:"I'm scared Lwazi...your friend keeps popping up in my face whenever I try to close my eyes" Him:"it's way past midnight... Get up and let's get you to bed" Me:"are you leaving again?" Him:"I'm not done at the club" Me:"please don't go.... Please " I tightly held on to him and sobbed. Him;"okay listen I'm not going to leave let's get into bed" He picked me up and placed me into bed he took off his clothes and just got into bed with his shorts only. He kissed my forehead and pulled me towards him. Him:"50 grand down the drain....

We have to get you help and fast" Me:"it's just a phobia not ultimate death" Him:"but you are shivering like you were saved from a bad winter's day Rori this can't go on you are pregnant" Me:"go to your precious club since you want to I didn't mean to bother you"

Him:"don't you dare talk to me like that... When will this end?" I sighed and faced the other way which was I waste cause he flipped me over to look at him. Him:"what should I do though"

Me:"don't send me to your sister please let me stay here with you" Him:"that's all you want?"

Me:"umh...yeah". Him;"you'll listen to what I say?" Me:"no I don't want you to control me" He poked my forehead. Him:"for your safety" Me:" I was much safer at home being a poor girl rather than being here with you" Him:"going to juvenile for pick pocketing and beating up a person" I rolled my eyes Me:"did you really have to dig up my past Lwazi?I learnt my lesson" Him:"oh so you learnt your lesson but you beat up my

guard?" Me:"he was all up in my face" Him:"how so?" I poked his eyes Me:"like that" Him:"you are hurting me Rori...I'd be signing on the dotted line right now" Me:"what type of business takes place at midnight?" Him:"business you don't have to know now go to sleep" Me:" I can't sleep with this sound outside" Him:"I can make it better" Me:"so you are the son of Zues you control the weather?" Him:"I'm your husband and I'll do anything to make you feel better" Me:"and how will you..." He shut me up with a kiss and got on top of me and when i was still enjoying the moment his phone had to ring, he ignored it and just made love to me even with the thunderstorm as they say the devil is a liar. I guess being tired put me to sleep cause I woke up to the smell of food warm toast to be exact I opened one eye just to see who is actually doing this cause Lwazi ain't the romantic type but it was really him. Him:"morning" I pulled up the blanket and covered myself up. He sat on

the bed and pulled the blanket away. Him:"wake up I have a surprise for you" I groaned Me:"no surprises please" Him:"wake up come on.. You need the sunlight" Me:"fine" I got up and put on his shirt I dragged myself of the bed.

Him:"where are you going?" Me:"to jump of the balcony and die" Him:"you still got jokes I see" I just strut to the bathroom and cleaned up luckily this child is not like those on tv where you just throw up the moment you find out that you are pregnant or maybe it's still coming who knows. I walked to the bedroom and Lwazi was already eating so I crawled up the bed and joined in. Him:'your feeling okay?" Me:"mmh" I hummed cause i had the piece of toast in my mouth. Him:"so today we are going to a place i know you'll love" Me:"I hate all the fancy places so no I won't love it" Him:"well finish eating and go take a shower than we can bounce" I shrug and began bouncing on the bed Him:"not bounce like that come on eat up" Me:"you said

we'll bounce" Him:"I give up love I really don't know what to do anymore" I chuckled and gave him a bite of my toast and kissed his cheek.

Me:"don't try too hard" Him:"I understand you full or want more?" Me:"I'm fine Lwazi I don't want to get fat" Him:"but we gotta feed the little guy so that he can be strong like daddy" He wanted to lay on his tummy. Me:"uh uh you'll spill coffee and stuff on the bed Lwazi"

Him:"sorry" He took the tray and placed it down and got on his tummy to kiss mine and give it a rub. Him:"we will have this baby come rain or high water okay Nana in 8 months time you'll be here with us I promise" He kissed it and gave it a rub laying his huge head on my tummy.

Him:"Rori" Me:"mmh" Him:"I love you hear me"

I ran my fingers through his hair. Me:"I love you too" Him:"good now go take a shower we gotta bounce and don't bounce on the bed" He chuckled and pecked my lips I had to go take a shower since I'm forced to. Kuli I just got up

and the first thing that came to mind was to call Lwazi and the son of a bitch answered cocky as ever. Him:"what do you want little girl" I chuckled Me;"so I'm a little girl... So this is the thank you I get for trying to help you?" Him:"who are you fooling? We both know you were helping yourself thinking I'd let her go well forget it she's mine and she's here to stay" Me:"we'll see about that when I tell her your little secrets" He laughed so hard he scared me I cleared my throat. Him:"see what I mean you are still an infant if you can threaten me... I'll kill you even before you could say Lwazi understand me? Now stop calling me" He hung up on me. Me:"ahhh" I screamed I threw the phone on the bed he'll be sorry for this I swear I'm nobody's doormat nxa. Rori When Lwazi came back from his phone call he looked sour but I acted like I didn't notice and flashed a smile at him as he picked me up spinning me around busy kissing my neck. Him:'i love you"

Me:"I love you too now put me down before you make me dizzy" Him:"so you ready?" I nod and he took the lyrics diary I was holding yesterday

Me:"what'd you doing with that?" Him:"I just love it so I'm going to read more" Me:"no umh let me give you another one" I took the very first diary I wrote in all about my childhood it's much better than this one cause it's all about my near death experience so I don't want anyone to even remind me of that. Him:'thanks let's go"

Me:"where are we going?" Him:'it's a surprise"

Me:"I hate surprises you know that" Him:"you'll love this one please get in" Me:"thank you but..."

Him:'no just let me do something for you just once without the evil Rori stealing my shine" We were riding in the blue mini Cooper convertible and when I thought I had seen it all he played If by Davido and he was even whistling to it what is going on though. To be continued .

. What is the surprise? •don't forget,
like,comment, share and mention •

[03/09, 07:34] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . Episode 30

Continues . . Today Lwazi was happy
shame but who ever kept calling him pissed
him off cause he'd hang up all the time. Me:"let
me answer it for you" Him:"they are not worth
your time love I'll deal with them myself"
Me:"well I feel sorry for whoever it is cause you
look ugly with anger right now" Him:"I'm not
angry... Negative energy ain't good for my baby
so I'm never getting angry again" Me:"this I'd like
to see" He smiled Him:"I'm happy feet...."
Me:"so where are we going Lwazi you have
been driving for ages I'm even hungry" Him:"we
are almost there just behind that tall building"
Me:"*what tall building?" Him:"that one... And we
have arrived" Me:"what are we doing here?"
Him:" you'll see come" Me:"I'm not getting out of
this car until you tell me what are we doing
here" Him:"please I'll carry you inside" Me:"on
your back?" Him:"yes on my back now come"

Me:"and no squeezing my butt while we are walking" Him:"I'm not squeezing your butt I'm making sure that you don't fall" Me:"go you now pick me up". Him:"come on" Me:"I'm going back inside the car" Him:"fine come" I grinned like an idiot and walked towards him he really put me on his back and walked with me towards the entrance of this record studio we went to the receptionist and believe me people were looking at us like we are crazy but who cares. Lwazi:"okay get off" Me:"that was fun let's do it again" He chuckled and put me down holding my hand taking me to the reception desk. Lwazi:"hey Wendy" Wendy:"hi Mr Mkhize" She smiled so hard i felt sorry for her. Lwazi:"listen im here for Biggie and Musa where are they?' Wendy:"they are waiting for you in studio 14 second floor" Lwazi:"thanks.... Come" He pulled on me to the lift and to be serious I'm not so sure to what we are doing here and it's not like i need a record deal. He wrapped his hands

around my waist and started kissing my neck with his hands traveling up my chest to my boobs. Me:"uh uh " Him:"don't you want to try something daring?" Me:"no I don't now stop" Him:"kiss me and I'll stop" I chuckled and broke his silly hold on my waist and leaned against the lift as it seemed to be going slowly when I needed it to hurry up cause Lwazi was busy with my neck. Me:"the guards are watching" Him:"we'll teach them a few tricks.... " I pushed him off all smiley and the moment the lift opened I felt saved and I quickly walked out. We walked to studio 14 and when we got there we found three guys there thank God i didn't dress up in those fancy dresses and heels I was wearing a thigh torn up jean and a black and white polkadot crop top and black jacket and some sneakers. Lwazi:"guys" They all screamed and stood up did their handshakes and shoulder bumped. Guy1:"so you remembered us?" Lwazi:" I'm a busy man...anyway guys this

is Rorisho my wife and babe this is Biggie and Musa I don't know the other guy" Musa:"this is Trey one of her artists" Me:"Trey songs?" They chuckled Biggie:"so what brings you here Mr busy man" Lwazi:"oh I brought her here she is the rapper here not me" Me:"no I'm not" Musa:"feel free just drop a few bars" I looked at Lwazi and he laughed. Me:"how could you? You'll pay for this" Lwazi:"come on". Trey:"drop a few bars" They all sat down and left me in the center Me:"you are joking right?" Lwazi:"I'll carry you to the car" Me:"for this I need a buffet of food understand" Lwazi:"anything mama" Biggie:"so shall I?" Me:"umh yeah" He put on a beat and yeah i liked it. Me:"this is a diss type of freestyle so no hard feelings" I cleared my throat and just began doing my thing the nerves i had seemed to have vanished i was flowing i stopped and opened my eyes to find the guys staring at me. Biggie switched off the beat and then it was dead quite then Trey broke the

silence and clapped I let out a sigh of relief cause now everyone was smiling. Trey:'that was some dope stuff really" Me:" thanks....".

Lwazi:"I'll forget the fact that you were dissing me and think of the fact that you one talented girl" I stuck my tongue out at him. Biggie:"how would you feel if I signed you" Me:"what? me behind the booth " Biggie:"you good and believe me I know talent when I see one" I looked at Lwazi and he nod with a smile on his face. Me:"please excuse me" I ran out and just screamed and jumped up and down in excitement and then I contained myself and went back inside with a smile on my face.

Me:"I'll do it" Biggie:"well welcome on board" He shook my hand. Musa:"did you write these?" Me:"yes" He nod Musa:"do you like have any idea of how you want the beats to be like?" Me:"well those are going to be slow yet with a hit of bass and a piano at some" Biggie:"let me see that,and you behind the booth and put on

the headphones" I stood there amazed as hell I can't do this not now even I thought we'd still be negotiating. Me:"umh I don't think I'm ready"
Musa:"training in progress come on" Me:"Lwazi please help me here" Lwazi:"I love you mama"
Me:"mxm and stop calling me mama.... Can I have the diary" Biggie:"yeah sure umh try this one I like it" Me:"umh RORISHO.... This is actually quite private" Trey:"we won't tell"
Me:"fine...." I dragged myself to the booth with Lwazi busy clapping hands for me acting like an idiot. Well this song is a self tittle song talking all about my childhood to when I got diagnosed with depression and stuff and when I started smoking and spending two months in juvenile. I put on the headphones and Biggie played some beats for me I liked the 5th one so yeah I had to rap to it and as any ordinary person I am sure I restarted about three times before I felt like I got the tune and just did my thing with Lwazi busy taking a video after everything i got out

and took a bottle of water. It's tough being behind that booth I tell you it's all about perfection. I went to seat on Lwazi's lap.

Biggie:"let's go over the rough sketch then we'll edit it" I nod and swallowed the water Me:"don't make me sound like Alvin and the chipmunks please" Miss:"we'll make you sound as original as you are". Lwazi:"is that all guys I'm tired of looking at your ugly faces" Biggie:"you can go and leave the lovely lady with us" Lwazi:"stop smoking the fake stuff cause it's obviously making you crazy if you think I'm leaving my wife with you" Biggie:"we'll be working on the conditions of her contract" Me:"I'm starving Lwazi" Lwazi:"see my babies are starving Biggie" Biggie:"listen to this and shut up" He played the rough piece and it sounded different it sounded like me but somehow amazing I couldn't stop smiling and then he edited it we were in there for hours and i must say my song was dope it even had Lwazi dancing side to

side. Me:"thank you" I whispered and kissed his neck Lwazi:"you welcome" Well we actually spent half of our day in the studio and Biggie said he'll talk to the superiors and play them the song then we'll talk so Lwazi took me to Wimpy for lunch then shopping. Him:"where to next?" Me:"can I get a tattoo?" Him:"you serious about that?" I nod Him:"what type?" Me:"a dolphin on the side of my neck or the back" Him:"okay come I'll take you to a friend of mine" Me:"it hurts right?" Him:"yes but I'll be there don't worry" I smiled and kept on sipping on my ice cream smoothie we drove to the tattoo parlor and yeah i got a dolphin tattoo on my bicep cause i had to get a lock on the back of my neck with Lwazi's name on top and he got a key with my name too so matching tattoos but my body was on fire but it was fun to spend the day with Lwazi he's changing bit by bit and the scary side seems to be dying down or maybe I'm used to it who knows.

[03/09, 07:35] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . . Episode 31 . .

RORI . . I had just gotten out of the shower.

Me:"I'm going to make a sandwich" I put on his vest and my slippers and walked out i love wearing his shirts to bed nothing more,he was going to take a shower anyway so yeah. I walked out I was starving for real but this house has it all so I'm going to get fat, I made myself a sandwich spread with nutella and some orange juice busy listening to the song I recorded today I can't get enough of it I can't get enough of hearing my own story. This side the holidays are coming to an end so soon it's school time and don't think I won't go cause I will and just for three months or until I show. . CHRISSEY

Hi I'm Christina Hernandez I'm 22 years old and yes I'm Mexican but half Caucasian, I'm the third born in my family i got two brothers one is dead and I'm left with the middle born Carlos Hernandez. "Chrissy what's the plan?" Carlos

shouted Me:"what do you think I'm doing now?
He has a wife and that bitch is always
answering his phone" Him:"who and what is she
to him?" Me:"his WIFE! this plan has to change"
Him:"The Red flies are allowed to have wives?
Don't they kill them?" Me:"this one is
different,she is till there" Him:"this is why I said
go and get pregnant but no you just had to ruin
it all" Me:"screw you Carlos" I stood up and
walked to my room busy telling me about
getting pregnant when they know very well that
they are the reason I can't have kids. When I
met Andrew I thought everything was going to
be alright but then Benny my older brother got
killed in a gang fight everything changed cause
The Red flies killed him and ever since then it
was war. One year ago. I just arrived in SA for
my modeling gig and some of the models I was
with suggest we got clubbing just to distress
after a mean ass photo shoot so I agreed and I
got dressed in my pink body hugging dress and

red bottom heels and took my gold studded clutch bag and went out my hotel room to the foyer where we said we'd meet up I was waiting for the girls busy tapping away on my phone "Ahem" I lifted my head up and saw this handsome black guy with his dazzling brown eyes staring at me. Me:"yes?" Him:"im Lwazi but you can call me Andrew especially for you" Me:"okay Andrew what can I do for you?" Him:"in this case it's what I can do for you" Me:"oh really now?" He smirked and kissed the back of my hand Him:"how about I take you out of this boring Hotel foyer" Me:"i actually love this foyer its beautiful" Him:"then that means I had visioned you when i created this" Me:"you are an interior designer?" Him:"even better the owner" Me:*and he's cocky too wow" Him:"can I get your name?" Me:"Chrissy and i gotta go my friends are here" Him:"give me your numbers at least" Me:"umh I don't give out my numbers to strangers" He sulked in the most cute way I

found myself smiling at his craziness.

Me:"room 301 and I'll give them to you"

Him:"now or?" Me:"I'm going clubbing now so yeah tomorrow" He kissed my cheek and walked away he's weird no yeah I'll see you there so yeah I strust towards my friends and we went clubbing. RORI I actually ate the first two slices and made two more and ate those now I'm eating my third serving of bread. Wet hands just wrapped around me and he moved my hand to the side and kissed my tattoo and it was still painful if I might add he kissed the one on my bicep too, I was biting my lower lip when he started kissing the one on the back of my neck sucking on it like he's sucking the pain away i grabbed on his head pulling on his hair and that just made him go on harder giving me butterflies in my stomach Me:"that hurts"
Him:"hmm" he groaned Me:"stop Lwazi.... You are hurting me" Actually it felt good like pain mixed with pleasure and everything didn't natter

not even the fact that I was hungry. He gave it a sweet peck then kissed my cheek. He turned me around and roughly picked me up placing me on the table, took my hand and placed it on his dick which was hard and ready for action.

Him: "feel that?" I nod Him: "now you got me addicted to having sex but tonight we are going to make love okay?" Me: "what's the difference?"

Him: "I'll be extra gentle.... And it'll be more magical" Me: "still don't see the difference you'll still be hovering over me with red eyes" He slowly moved the shirt up rubbing my thighs.

Him: "I'll show you" he whispered Just the way he looked at me you'd swear he was an Angel a sweet guy but then again I could blame it on being horny, he leaned over and pecked my lips.

Him: "I love you mama" I chuckled and grabbed on his face. Me: "where does mama come from?" He smiled and rubbed my tummy.

Him: "we are going to be parents soon I might as well teach the baby how to be respectful" I

smiled so hard I felt my cheeks burn, I bumped heads with him. Me:"I love you too papa"
Him:"mean that?" I nod and pecked his lips.
Me:" I mean it" Him:"I'll hold you to that....now how many of these did you have?" Me:"roughly this is the third one" He laughed shaking his head side to side. Me:"what?" Him:"im going to have a fatty of a wife...no more back rides"
Me:"but Lwazi I was hungry" Him:"I know and I understand but no more back rides" Me:"that's not fair I want my rides you promised" He just moved back with his hands on his waist eyebrows raised all shit. Him:"who hit you? Why are you crying?" Me:"you promised" He shook his head and just picked me up from the table
Him:"I'll fuck those hormones down to size don't worry" I giggled and just kissed him and he responded going up the stairs with me to our bedroom and the we actually shut the door on your faces and your imagination

[03/09, 07:35] Mk: My handsome monster-

Our holy matrimony . . . Episode 32 . . .

CHRISSEY I was sitting with Carlos who was busy getting high and drunk. Me:"I have a plan a better one even" Him:"what?" Me:"well I will go back to SA and worm my way in Andrew's life". Him:"and how will that help?" Me:"stop being a idiot you know exactly why the red flies kill their first wives" I saw a smile build up on his face. Me:"exactly we kidnap the wife and threaten to sell her to his worst enemies the Chinese if he doesn't give us a certain amount of money" Him:"cause the first wife is more valuable than the second right? Enemies run after your first love great plan baby sis" Me:"I know but you'll have to be in SA" Him:"you know I can't step foot in SA without being killed or arrested so go I'll organise a group for you that side" Me:"they better be good cause I don't want to die" Him:"so how will you get ose to the guy?" Me:"I'm pregnant with his child remember? I have a foolproof plan" Him:"it better not fail"

Me:"like you failed at school... Just trust me and get those guys ready" I stood up collecting my plate. Me:"I'm leaving day after tomorrow"
Him:"okay everything will be ready by tomorrow"
I walked into the kitchen and started doing the dishes I'll make that little girl pay if she thinks she can take the throne not in my watch I'll make her sorry. KULI I was at the mall all alone because my so called friends are busy this side Rori is too busy with her new record deal and the buzz surrounding her single Rorisho which is good if I may say so and Unathi called me a bad friend for what I did to Rori but I don't care I can make friends just like that I was replying to a text when I bumped into someone and dropped my cellphone I went down to pick it up but I guess the person I bumped into also did the same cause we bumped into each other with our heads
Me:"ouch" ???:"sorry" I picked up the phone and stood up with the stranger's help I dusted

myself up. ??: "are you okay?" I looked at him and nod. Me: "I'm fine really" Him: "good I'm Cumani by the way" Me: "Kulisiwe nice meeting you" Him: "you should watch where you are going next time" Me: "I'm sorry but it's not entirely my fault just in case you didn't notice you also bumped into me" I tried to walk away but he pulled me back Me: *what now? You going to lecture me on the rules of the road again?" Him: "just wanted to ask you if you would like to have lunch with me I want to apologies" I looked at him and how nicely dressed he was not forgetting cute so there is nothing much to lose. Me: "yeah sure I'd love that" He smiled leading me to this expensive restaurant i think i have to make him mine for real. We found a table near the window, he opened the chair for me. Me: "thank you" Him: "cool" He sat down and then the flirting on his side, we had lunch then went strolling around the mall. RORI The fact that I'm

pregnant makes Lwazi put me on eggshells well that's if he feels like it I'm not complaining about the nice treatment except for the fruits and vegetables I have eat after every meal and not forgetting the pills. He's always home making sure I exercise like I was told. Him:"I'm never going to church again" Me:"yeah right I'm sure you can't wait to see that girl from the front row" Him:"what girl? Did the pastor hit you with the Bible?" Me:"who cares? I'm even hungry" Him:"go eat" I took off my heels and walked into the kitchen and went to the fridge took out some McCain oven chips and last night's grilled chicken I heated the chips first and then chicken I took out a tub of chocolate and vanilla ice cream. I put the chicken and chips in one large dish chilli sauce on top then I'm sorted I went to the living room while Lwazi was walking down the stairs busy putting on his shirt Him:"don't look at me" Me:"come fuck me". He chuckled and kissed my cheek

Him:"woman you just had a bunch of ladies pray for you so please don't sin now...what can I get you to drink" Me:"apple juice babe"
Him;"don't start without me understand? I'm also hungry" Me:"order pizza" Him:'you'll get fat.... No I mean you'll umh I...I'll order pizza" He disappeared into the kitchen I hate it when he says I'll get fat I'm not doing this on purpose it's the baby. He came back with two glasses of Apple juice and he sat down next to me pecking my lips. Him:"I love your glowing self" Me:"thank God for your baby's powers... I love you too"
Him:'this guy is making you extra beautiful" I smiled and just took a piece of chicken. Him:"so much chillies? It'll give you heart burn" Me:"I want some chillies so I don't care about the consequences" Him:"well im going to get myself some Eno' I nod busy stuffing my face with food. Me:"is the pizza coming?" Him:"it'll come let me eat first" Me:"Lwazi don't get on my nerves" Him:"but all this oily stuff will make

you umh more plump" Me:"what? So I'm plump now? Oh I'm plump but I wasn't plump when you were busy putting your baby in me I wasn't plump was I?" Him:"I'm sorry" He took out some chips and tried feeding it to me with a weird smile on his face. Him:" I love you plump or not you'll always be the one for me" Me:" but you said I'm plump Lwazi...I'm fat " Him:"no no you are not fat you are beautiful you are my beautiful wife whom I love" He pulled my hand away removing the piece of chicken from my mouth. Him:"you hear me? I love you" Me:"even when I'm fat?" He smiled and nod Him:"even if you get fat like a hippo or blue whale I'll still love you" Me:"so I am fat?" Him:"yes and i love you and im going upstairs before you start crying, cry baby" Him:"see what I mean? Bye" He quickly stood up and ran upstairs while i finished up eating and took the dish putting it in the dishwasher and went back to my ice cream all alone. There was a knock on the door while I

was lazing around. Me:"Lwazi!" Him:"what?"
Me:"there is someone at the door" Him:"so? You
get it" Me:"Lwazi I'm still eating" Him:"put the
food down and get the door now" Me:"you are
so not my husband" I put the ice cream tub and
walked to the door I opened the door and there
was a white man, he was wearing shades.
Me:"LWAZIII!" I screamed my lungs out cause i
was scared this guy was not smiling or anything.
Lwazi:"what now?" I grinned at the guy. Me:"get
your ass down here right now" I made space for
the terminator to come in. Me:"please come
in...maybe smile a little" I mumbled the last part
he walked in and I closed the door, I showed
him to seat but he just stood there holding on to
his sports bag. Lwazi came downstairs
changed into other clothes I'll have to wash
all the clothes he used. Lwazi:*what's going on
with... Eric?" So terminator has a name and he
took off the glasses and a smile formed on his
face idiot. . Eric??? Cumani?

[03/09, 07:35] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . Episode 33 . . Well
Terminator turns out to be my brother in law if I
can call him that but he's handsome in a scary
way very much buff no wonder Mpho is
always glowing Lwazi:"I didn't know you
were coming" Eric:"you know I don't tell anyone
where I'm going" Omagoit he's got that Vin
Diesel voice I'm sorry Lwazi but I'll have to
divorce you for him I mean the guy has my
crush's voice and he's even bald and buff
imagine the sex well they did their
handshake and shoulder bump well I slowly
walked towards Lwazi and he just had to wrap
his hand around me hello I'm trying to get your
brother in-law here problem he doesn't smile.
Lwazi:"Eric I'd like to introduce you to my wife
and baby mama Rorisho" He gave out his hand
for a handshake so I gave him mine so firm.
Eric:"nice to meet you" Me:"like wise... Umh can
I get you guys anything to drink?" Lwazi:"the

usual for me" Me:"a beer?" Lwazi:"don't cramp my style..." Eric:"I'll have a double shot of whisky no rocks" I walked into the kitchen with the tub of ice cream and just placed it back into the fridge and took out my chocolate coated mallows I'm spoilt okay don't act surprised I poured them their whisky and put some rocks in Lwazi's drink he loves it like that I walked into the living room and gave them their drinks I sat down and opened my mallows with Lwazi staring at me. Eric:"thank you..." I nod since I had a mallow in my mouth Lwazi:"so what brings you here?" Eric:"before that I'd like it if you increased the security around this house and change the IP address every two days" Okay this guy is bossy what does he mean about all of those. Lwazi:"done" Eric:"I hope it has a secret compartment" Lwazi:"two of them" Eric:"good" Their silly talk bored me and I wasn't even enjoying my mallows anymore. Me:"I think I'll excuse you guys" I attempted to stand up but

Eric just raised his hand up and stopped me
Eric:"I'm here for you" Me:"for me? Umh o-kay" I
sat back down and slowly took a bite of my
mellow guys I was freaking out from his look.
Eric:"Mpho told me about your call Andrew but
you don't want her to come to my house"
Lwazi:"yeah she can't leave South Africa cause
this pregnancy is fragile,that's why I need to be
here no jobs for the next five months" Eric:"now
that's something I wasn't told Andrew I
shouldn't be here right now but your sister
wasn't talking to me cause of you guys... So I'll
be here for three weeks like two weeks she'll
train here then the third week I'm taking her"
Me:"what?" That got my attention and made me
sit up straight. Me:"take me for a week? I have
school, my music and family I can't just
disappear for a week" Eric:"well it's not a
request" I swallowed hard and stared at Lwazi
who was just mute he's not getting the cake
tonight. Eric:"if you want to survive all the

attacks that will come your way you'll need more than 3 weeks but these are just the basics after you give birth you are coming to England and that's not a request" Me:"But Lwazi say something here what about my life here the baby even" Eric:"as I said it's not a request can I get a refill" I looked at Lwazi but he was just quite he's not going to fight this is he I stood up and walked to the kitchen and took the entire whisky bottle Lord knows I'm thinking about drinking it right now but I won't punish my baby like this, I walked into the living room and placed it on the table. Me:"serve yourself nxa" I was about to walk away but Lwazi pulled me back. Me:"what do you want?" Him:"seat down' Me:"I.." Him:"Now" I sat down as instructed Me:"wagafa serious wanya" Lwazi gave me a death stare I don't care. Eric:"now give me the keys to the basement and I'll set up I hope it's sound proof and bullet proofed too" Lwazi:"yeah even has a secret door way in and out"

Eric:"good and you... Tomorrow target practice before school" Lwazi gave him the keys I

didn't even know the house has a basement

Lwazi:"I'll be right there" Eric:"of course..."

Terminator stood up and walked out while I was left with Lwazi who day down next to me he even tried to kiss me. Me:"are you crazy? Do you even love me as you claim you do?"

Him:"don't get on my nerves Rori we all make sacrifices now make yours" Me:'but I did I

sacrificed a lot to be here Lwazi I don't want to do this please" Him:"well you have to you have

no choice now do you? I wont see my son grow up do you understand that?" Me:"mxm so

everything is about you i forgot not the fact that im going to be trained to kill people"

Him:"actually you'll use your talents and all your assets to you advantage... Girls work in the

seduction department" Me:"you such an ass

jeez" I stood up and ran upstairs seduction my ass I don't need this I won't even flaunt around

my body for the sake of a gang I don't even know screw them I took off my dress to go and take a shower and I took a quick shower got out and applied some body lotion I wore my one button high waist torn up jean and a white see through blouse I tied my braids into a neat bun I am going out and Lwazi can't stop me I have guards anyway I put on my sneakers and took my gold Gucci sling bag and cellphone. I texted Unathi notifying her that I was coming over and then I texted Kuli but bitch just gave me attitude over the phone. Im not surprised she's been giving me attitude lately but im not one to beg I got into the car and the guard drove out actually it's two of them see I'm in prison right now the drive to Unathi's house seemed short but before I got out the guards got out first and checked around before opening the door for me I got out. Me:"can I have my space please?" Ron:"no now please move mam" Me:"Aggh Karabo kill me please" I walked into

the yard and believe me I was so happy to be met by my friend all dressed up and smiley.

Her:"Mrs Mkhize" I chuckled and hugged her.

Me:"hey friend gosh I missed you' Her:"I missed you two...and I see the baby does you good"

Me:"I wish girl I'm forever hungry or throwing up not forgetting horny" Her:" Lwazi is there he gives it to you good I'm sure" Me:"mmh he does...are you ready to go?" Her:"yeah sure.. Umh will it be just the two of us?" Me:"I had invited your friend but yoh I got some senseless answer" Her:"she'll get over it" The guards opened the door for us and we got into the back I'm not going to wait for Kuli my life doesn't revolve around her. We were driven to chicken licken cause I was craving for their spicy chicken when Kuli called me I didn't waste her time I picked up. Me:"yeah" Her:"where are you cause I'm at Unathi's crib" I chuckled Me:"listen to me okay I have my own problems I can't keep on sniffing your ass so please get off your high

horse you'll find us at the mall if you want to come" I hung up and gave Unathi my attention. Her:'let me guess Kuli?" I nod Me:'what's her problem with me?" Her:"blame it on the fame and the guy you married" Me:"so she hates me for what I have? That's so lame for real" I took a sip of my juice Me:'if only she knew what I knew she'll shut up" Her:"gold diggers friend Kuli has that worm in her brain" Me;"I hate that worm of hers she should get rid of it" Our orders came and we dug in busy catching up and stuff I don't think I'll go to school not anymore anyway my life has just turned into one huge roller coaster ride and i dont have control over it Lwazi and his stupid gang own it . . . LWAZI Eric and I finished setting up in the basement this is the only way I can keep Rori here and if that means I have to be hard on her then I will be. Me:"can i get you anything?" Him:"no I have to go now but I'll see you guys tomorrow" Me:"okay so you'll stay at the hotel?" Him:"yeah but I'll change it

every day as I said you should change the passwords every day" Me:"will do now about Karabo..." Him:"I'm sending him to Russia so he won't bother you for now" Me:"cool see you when you come tomorrow" We shoulder bumped and I walked him out after he left I went upstairs now to grovel at my wife's feet but she was not in the bedroom so i called her but she hung up on me i tried one last time and she picked up Me:'where are you?" Her:"getting some freshair" Me:"get your ass back here right now before you drive me crazy" Her:"love you too" She hung up on me Lord help me not to lose my cool please, i went downstairs and ordered some pizza and put on some soccer just to pass the time. Rori has a lot of explaining when she gets back. RORI I was having fun with Unathi at the mall we went to watch some movies then went to get some ice cream i didn't even want to go home but I had to go and face the music so I drove Unathi

home and also went home to see if my husband is angry or not but I don't care he just called me an object whereby their gang will use me as an instrument not just any instrument a sex instrument he can't expect me to be overjoyed by that I walked inside just to find a box of pizza open so I went to take out a slice. "Put that back" Me:"mxm" I took a huge bite and walked upstairs with him right behind me I took off my shoes and wore my bunny slippers. Him:"where were you?" Me:"training to seduce people like you said" Him:"don't screw me" Me:"believe me I don't plan to" Him:"but what do you want from me? I'm trying here this is the only way I can keep you" Me:"hehe he says keep me what am I? Your torn up teddy that your parents are planning on throwing away?" Him:"you know what I need a drink I'm going out and don't wait up" Me:"who said I'll waste my energy" He took his jacket and car keys and just kissed my cheek. Him:"I love you" he whispered. I was

going crazy when he said that I just pulled him towards me and kissed him he responded and just picked me up pinning me against the door he kissed me so roughly God knows he got me wet in a split second that i was moaning in between the kiss and then viola we on the carpet humping each other like crazy I'm so weak I know but I love me like that

[03/09, 07:35] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . Episode 34 . . MINI
DRESS . I took my robe and put it on I was
hungry again. Me:"Lwazi...Dummy wake up" I
shook him and slapped him here and there and
he woke up angry as hell. Him:"what do you
want?" Me:"I don't want anything but your child
says he's hungry" Him:"so? You know where the
kitchen is so bounce" I slapped his forehead
Me:'be a father for once and get us food"
Him:"my job was fulfilled I made love to you and
more than once" Me:"you such an idiot
sometimes so please get us food I'm going to

take a shower" Him:"okay so what would the madam like?" Me:"anything excel those healthy stuff and eggs and Bacon" Him:"healthy stuff with bacon and eggs got it" Me:"I said except' Him:"I know so I'll bring them...should I order pizza?" I nod Me:"with lots of cheese and Avo please" Him:"okay you'll find me downstairs now hurry up" Me:"yes sir" I went to the bathroom and took a long shower I need it after everything that just happened after I got out and put on some body lotion and face cream I went to Lwazi's closet and took his shirt baggy clothes are the only way to go right now I put on my brown snuggs and walked downstairs just to find a home made burger waiting for me Me:"stuffed patty right?" Him:"yes and don't ask what I put in there" Me:" I won't ask I know it's just healthy stuff..." Him:"mmh so where are the rest of the clothes?" Me:"I dunno hey...umh what's in here" I opened the fridge and took out the ready made lasagne heated it up.

Him:"where will all of that go?" Me:"where that will go" Him:"you are such a foodie do you know that?" Me:"Lwazi I'll let you know I'm eating for two" Him:"one would swear it's three I seriously need to get you a personal trainer" Me:"your comments won't make me stop eating just so you know" Him:"I know I'm saying I'll get you a personal trainer" Me;"will he be hot? Or white and hot?" He blinked multiple of times and swallowed his food. Him:"are you talking to me?" Me:"no im talking to the man behind you turn around and look at him" Him:"I see no wonder you are just talking utter nonsense" Me:"yoh he's education he says utter nonsense with so much authority" We both laughed i dont know how but we always fight and laugh again. Him:'so I heard that there is something called water birth want to try it?" Me:"hee who is this white lady in front of me? Wtf is water birth?" Him:"babe I'm serious it's less creepy" Me:"papa are you scared? Scared of a little screams

and blood?" Him:"no I'm just trying to help you" I laughed Me:"well I don't want my baby turning into a tadpole" Him:"he won't turn into a tadpole babe he'll be cleansed" Me:"the nursers will clean him up after don't worry your handsome self" Him:"i said water birth" Me:"skip it now...so when is the pizza arriving" Him:"I'm sure it'll be here very soon" Me:"okay scardy cat...love" Him:"mmh?" Me:"i want you to promise me something" Him:"anything" Me:"please promise that no matter what you are doing you'll be there when I give birth, you'll be in the room with me" Him:"I'm going on a business trip the day before" Me:"Lwazi please I'm scared" Him:"you'll survive many women have" Me:"i hate you... Lwazi this is your baby too" Him:"I said water birth" Me:"no I want my baby to breath air not water" Him:"then business trip" I wanted to cry how can he think of leaving me when I need him. Me:"please say you'll be there I can't do it without you" Him;"water birth?" Me:"uh uh"

Him:"business trip" Me:"I HATE YOU" I pushed my chair back and attempted walking away with tears doing the nae nae on my face,he caught me up with a hug. Him:"babe I'm joking... I'll be there I promise" Me:"I hate your jokes, you know I can't do this on my own you know that very well" Him:"I'm sorry I'll be there okay, I'll be by your side all the way" Me:"promise me? Promise you'll hold my hand as I give birth" He kissed my head and picked me up spinning me around. Him:*I'll be peeking to see how far he is" I giggled covering my eyes since the tears were flowing they didn't want to stop. Him:"I love you my cry baby" He put me down and hugged me tightly. Him:'cry baby I wonder how you'll be when you are showing" Me:"I'm not a cry baby" [Door knock]. Me:"pizza" I pushed him away and jumped up and down Him:"surprising how food gets you happy" I chuckled and ran to the door and opened for the pizza guy. Me:"come pay papa" Him:"so I'm your wallet...Thanks dude" He

shut the door on the pizza guy. Him:"what do you want to drink?' Me:'grape juice "

Him:"good wait" He went to get us some juice while I put on the music Chanel Me:"Priddy ugly.." Him:"hell no change it..." Me:'he's so cute with all his tattoos" Him:"don't tell me you want to work with him someday" Me:"and more.." Him:"don't fuck me" Me:'I'll fuck him love"

Him:"nxa we are watching the news" Me:"I love you but want a bit of him" Him:"the news" We watched the news like crazy and I hated it with all of me but priddy ugly killed me.

[03/09, 07:35] Mk: My handsome monster- Our holy matrimony . . Episode 35 . . RORI Gosh I sleep with a sex freak i woke up with Lwazi's hard dick pressing on my ass i took my phone and checked the time it was still 04:30 i pulled up the blanket to go back to sleep. "I'd wake up if I were you" I looked at him and his eyes were still closed so I poked him and he pushed my hand away I poked him again.

Him:"fokoff man stop doing that" Me:"I'm checking if you are dreaming or not cause it's like 4am and you are saying I should wake up"
Him:"mmh *yawns* you have to get ready for Eric" Me:'we don't fuck so he shouldn't get used to me" Him:"you want to fuck with everyone are you that Horny?" Me:"not like you love" I chuckled and kissed his cheek Him:"what are you talking about?" I raised my eyebrow is he serious right now. Me:"I'm talking about this" I stroked his dick making him flinch he groaned biting his lower lip. He smirked and held on my hand. Him:"don't do that so early in the morning you'll hate me" Me:"sies you are not even ashamed of yourself" Him:"why should I? Just so you know I'm going back to work today so I'll get some leave when you get leave from school" I was really sleepy cause now I'd see him with that double version. Me:"can we go back to sleep now?" Him:"babe Eric will be here any minute now" I yawned and kissed his cheek.

Me:"thanks I love you and stop having dirty dreams about me" Him:"who says it's about you?" ever pushed you husband out of bed where he literally fell well I pushed mine

Me:"sleep on the couch or guest room" He got up angry asf Him:"fuck Rori I hit my head on the headboard" Me:"you'll live" The moment he moved his hand from the back of his head only did I see the seriousness of my stupidity it had blood

Me:"oh my gosh I'm so sorry babe let me clean that up" Him:"don't touch me" Me:"I'm sorry Lwazi I.." Him:"just shut up will you..you are giving me headache" I began crying Lord knows I didn't mean to hurt him not to the point where he had blood.

Me:"I'm sorry Lwazi please don't give me the silent treatment" He clicked his tongue and walked into the bathroom I actually sobbed louder than before I'm sorry I waited for him to come out of the bathroom and he was still angry thank God I'm still pregnant i crawled on to the edge of the bed

and put my hands together and with tears on my face my lower lip was trembling to show that I was really crying. Me:"Lwazi I'm sorry I swear to God I thought you'd be fine I didn't mean to hurt you" Him:"don't talk to me right now just get ready Eric will be here very soon" I was about to answer but the bedroom intercom rang Lwazi answered it. Him:"yes?" -oh hey Mr Thompson -nah she's wide awake I'll open for you -cool He put it down and looked at me. Him:"do you still want me to tell you that you have to freshen up?" I slowly shook my head with a finger in my mouth. Him:"and you staring at me? Are you doing that?" I slowly pulled myself out of bed and went to the bathroom, I did my normal hygiene routine I went back into the room and just put on my trackpants and trainers I put on a jersey since it was cold. Me:"I'm done" Him:"so? Go he's waiting" Me:"you dont have to be rude I apologised Lwazi I'm deeply sorry" He didn't care he just

pulled up the blanket and went back to sleep
nxa I'll apologize when he's calmed down so I
went downstairs to find Eric on the couches
Me:"morning" He looked at me and kept quite
he slowly stood up taking his bag. Him:"let's go"
Oh hell no i folded my arms i aint having it not
from him too. He gave me a stern look from
head to toe and back. Him:"didn't you hear what
I said? I said let's go" Me:"are you talking to me?
I thought we were giving each other the silent
treatment" Him:"young girl don't test me"
Me:"believe me you don't want to test me
either" He chuckled and walked towards me I
was scared but I had to stand my ground he
can't treat me like trash cause I'm not, he slowly
analyzed me and got closer to the point where I
could feel his breath hit my face and so early it
had that mint flavor about it. Him:"don't test me
sweety pie now follow me" I was scared but I'm
hard headed. Me:"apologies for being all up in
my space" Him:"bitch do you...." I slapped him

so hard I moved back cause his eyes showed so much rage. Me:"I'm not your bitch never ever call me a bitch understand? You may call your wife that but not me" He walked towards me and i kept on walking backwards till he got hold of my hand and pulled me towards him, he pinched my cheeks so hard together.

Him:"never talk about my wife understand me?"

I slapped his head away Me:"firstly never put your hands on me" i yanked my hand away

Me:"secondly you don't scare me so don't fool yourself... So are we doing this or should I go back to bed?"

Him:"you'll have to resemble a gun" I rolled my eyes is he for real I followed

him to the basement he placed all the guns on a table there.

Him:"look at me" He ruined the first one and resembled it again then the second one

I was just staring at him with my arms folded

I'm good at framing ain't I so yeah when he did the third one then he looked at me.

Him:"what are you waiting for? Want me to kiss you"

you don't want to know the answer to that. Me:"I wanna fuck you... So this thing has no bullets?" He shook his head Me:"God have mercy..." I took the gun and tried doing it like him but I failed dismally Me:"can you stop staring and help me?" Him:"you have attitude" Me:"and you have altitude so what's the difference? So help me" He snatched the gun from me and started at least this time he was slow so when he was done I also attacked it and passed yay then the second one and third one since the first one was a 9mm caliber the second one was a 24mm hand gun then an AK 27 so imagine if my granny saw me holding a gun. Me:"done so what now?" Him:"now you learn how to shoot" Me:"Alright so what will I shoot?" He just started shooting this statue like stuff I was scared cause he caught me off guard he shot about three times and then shoved the gun in my hands Him:"do it" Me:"can you stop being rude... Jeez you think you are the it thing mxm" I

pointed and then tried shooting but shame I'm useless I couldn't even pull the trigger. Me:"do I really have to do this?" Him:"if you want to live now shoot" Me:"I can't...I don't want to" He actually stared at me to the point where I felt naked so I just swallowed hard and looked to the front. Him:"put your legs apart a bit for support so that when the gun revolves you don't get hurt and don't put it close to your chest" Me:" I can't please" He stood behind me and held my hands his other hand moved to my thigh and pushed my leg apart Him:"now concentrate I want you to pull the trigger alright?" I swallowed and nod damn Mpho has such a presence that ain't for child's play having his hands on mine and his body so close to mine God forgive me. I pulled the trigger and missed the target Eric was busy directing my hands so yeah I now know how to shoot. I pulled myself away from him and got my composure Me:"is that all" He checked his wrist

watch Him:"yeah or you'll be late for school"
Me:"cool I'll go and get ready" I literally ran up the stairs into the kitchen before anything I made myself some cereal i went upstairs with it and I found Lwazi still sleeping so i let him be i took out my uniform and nicely arranged it on the bed then my shoes i also chose some clothes for Lwazi I don't know if he'll go to work anymore I shook him up. Me:"you still going to work?" He shook his head I hate it when he's angry at me like this I pecked his lips and slowly took his lip sucking on it he held on my face tightly pulling me closer to him we actually kissed even though he's angry at me the kiss was so yummy I didn't want to stop but I had to cause I had school so I pulled away and pecked his lips Me:"I'm sorry okay..." Him:"let me be angry for two more hours please... I'm not even driving you to school" Me:"Lwazi but I'm sorry" Him:"let me be angry okay now go take a shower you'll be late for school" Me:"am I

forgiven?" Him:"after school" I kissed his forehead I know I'm forgiven Me:"I love you,actually we love you" Him:"I love you too" I stood up just to get my ass spanked I looked at him and he had his eyes closed with a smile on his face. Him:"still angry" I walked to the bathroom and took a quick shower after I did the necessary and wore my school uniform I didn't tuck in the shirt I put on my blazer and tied my braids into a neat bun I took my bag and cellphone. Me:"Lwazi I'm going..." Him:"take some money from my wallet" Me:"thank you and get up" I took a hundred from his wallet and walked down just to find Eric still here even having breakfast Me:"do make yourself at home" He looked at me as I walked passed him and went to take some fruits to make a milkshake since I didn't finish my cereal. Me:"why are you looking at me like that?" Him:"such a short skirt? Are you going to school or pole dancing class" Me:"all of them what's

the problem with it? I'm not going to church" I poured my smoothie in a bottle. Me:"Lwazi won't be down now so do make yourself at home" Him:"how will you get to school?" Me:"by Taxi" Him:"not happening come I'll drive you"

He took his car keys and we walked out we found a red Lamborghini but the plate number said Rented but I doubt he opened it and I went to the passenger side and he got into his then off to school we went he even opened the door for me but he was quite all the way I got out and thanked him and believe me all eyes were on us but I don't care. Him:"I'll pick you up" Me:"okay 15:30 sharp" He not and got into his car and I went to the other side where I found Unathi all smiles. Me:"morning" We hugged Her:" morning to you too and who is that?" Me:"Lwazi's brother in-law" She gave me an eye that I couldn't read but she was thinking something naughty. Her;"he even drops you off?" Me:"yeah Lwazi is sick so they didn't want

me taking a taxi you know why" Her:"I see so does he have a brother?" I chuckled Me:"dunno so who are we waiting for?" Her:"Kuli" Me:"oh so you didn't walk together?" She shook her head Her:"so how is the baby?" I smiled and held my tummy Me:"happy and full of love" Her:"can't wait to see the small version of you and Lwazi she'll be cute" Me:"well in our house it's a he so pray Lwazi doesn't hear that" Her:"whatever he says but im going with a girl" I chuckled and then a car pulled up just besides us and Cumani walked out he opened the passenger door and Kuli walked out looking all high and mighty. Me:"is that her boyfriend?" Una:"yep she can't stop bragging" Kuli:"hi guys...umh babe have you met.." Cumani:"crazy girl ka Lwazi" I chuckled and we hugged. Me:"hello Cumani bae wam... Long time no see" Cumani:"I thought you needed space after you know who tried to you know what" Me:"water under the bridge" Kuli:"you know each other?" Cumani:"yep she

made my Christmas day to be the best ever, so Rori how is Lwazi?" Me:"stuck in bed cause of a head wound" Cumani:"what?" Me:*not that kind of head wound I pushed him off the bed and he hit his head hard so yeah" Cumani:"thank heavens I was freaking out anyway bye neh" Me:"bye..." Kuli was angry even when Cumani kissed her cheek she wore a fake smile but who cares. Me:"can we go in please I'm even hungry" Una:"drink your smoothie and stop starving the baby" Me:"I want real food like Pizza how are you Kuli" Kuli:"fine and you?" Me:"fine too...." We walked to class in silence

[03/09, 07:35] Mk: My handsome monster- Our holy matrimony . Episode 36 . . The entire first periods were introductions so I didn't have time to gossip with Unathi since Kuli is being a bitch. Break time I bought some pie and

Tropika since Lwazi put me on a strict juice diet only 100% so Tropika kinda fits the category,we were sitting under a peach tree. Una:"so when are you due?". Me:"well now I'm like seven months away so mine is having a count down" Kuli:"Rori?" Me:"yes?" Kuli:"where do you know Cuman from?" Me:"oh he's friends with Lwazi so I met him at some Christmas braii" Kuli:"I see ..you guys friends?" I shook my head Me:"we just know each other and they kinda overprotective over me that's all" Una:"so friend you don't tell me that you know such handsome guys I need one" I shook my head and swallowed my food. Me:"friend all I'll say is stay away from Lwazi's friends they are cold hearted players shame" Unathi chuckled but quickly got her composure. Kuli:*so you saying he doesn't love me!" . Me:"I never said that Kuli okay all I'm saying is be careful around him" Kuli:"just like you should be around your so called husband" I placed the juice down and

stared at her. Me:"meaning?" Una:"guys no"
Me:"Unathi let her speak" Kuli:"your little
husband slept with me" That killed me but I put
on a brave face. Me:"o-kay...did you enjoy it?"
Kuli:"what?" Me:"did you enjoy it? Did you have
the time of your life? Did you really feel your
pussy tingle with joy?" Una:"friend please" I
chuckled just trying to push back the tears.
Me;"when did you sleep with him? Was it after
he came back from his trip? Or when you were
busy snitching on me about the birth control
pills?" Kuli:"it doesn't matter all that matters is
that your husband is not a saint" Me:"I see so
did you have fun? Like have the time of your
life?" She smiled Lord help me. Her:"it was
amazing like he's the best better than the rest"
Me:"i see..so did you meet again?" Her:"he
wanted us to but I said no" I stood up and
dusted myself up i cleared my throat i slapped
her so hard Me:"that's for messing with my life
do you know that Lwazi almost killed me" She

was about to speak but I slapped her again.
Me:"you messed with the wrong girl bitch...*I
chuckled* this is Rorisho in case you forgot I
eat bitches for lunch and I'll make you pay for
even thinking that your words hurt me, you
better sleep with one eye open from now on" I
took my juice and just blew her a kiss and
winked. Me:"Unathi I'm going to class you
coming?" She shrug and stood up now how will
i do it I mean im pregnant as nd stress ain't
good for the baby light bulb Lwazi will deal
with her for me. Me:"let's visit Leroy I miss my
friend hey" Her:"you sure?" I nod and we walked
to 12C we saw him with a bunch of guys at the
corner we walked towards them and me being
the feared bitch they tapped him and he looked
at us. I slowly waved at him he stood up and
came to us. Leroy:"hey Unathi...umh" I hugged
him that's how much I missed my friend. Me:"hi
Roy Roy" We pulled away from the hug Him:"hey
to you too Roy Roy" I chuckled Him:"you

look...umh I don't know how you look" Me:"oh wow two minutes and you are already dissing me? So who are your new buddies?" He introduced us to his friends and then it was back to class time i really enjoyed talking to Leroy and my class went on till it was home time i went to wait for Eric with Unathi when Beauty and that bitch Kuli they did a high five laughing at us so I walked in front of them. Me:"what's so funny?". Beauty:"Miss rapper doesn't trust herself" I moved closer to her Me:"say that again" Kuli:"she said..." I raised my hand Me:"wait for your turn bitch your trail will come soon" Kuli:"did you just call me a bitch?" I burst out laughing even clapping and moved to her. Me:"and what are you going to do about it? Huh?" I started crying Real tears laughing through them. Me:"believe me this is all it takes for Lwazi to hit the rails me crying and blowing a casket about leaving him" Kuli:"he won't do anything to me" Me:"wanna bet? I told you that

you messed with the wrong girl" I may seem crazy but she shouldn't have told me Eric's Lamborghini pulled up I didn't wipe my tears away I moved away from them. Me:"bye Unathi" Eric took off his shades when he saw me, he tried to touch me but I shoved him away I got into the passenger's side and hooted for him since he was still standing outside he got in and just stared at me Him:"what's wrong_?" Me:"what's supposed to be wrong? Just drive me home" Him:"I don't drive crying people" Me:"fine" I attempted to open the door but he locked us in Him:"we are not friends but what's wrong just tell me" I cried a river now he rubbed my back Him:'what's wrong?" Me:'Lwazi cheated on me with a friend of mine and she was gloating about it....." Him:"who is she?" Me:"no leave it..." Him:'tell me or show me" Me:"umh Eric please..." Him;"SHOW ME!" I quickly pointed at Kuli the Lamborghini flew and soon it stopped in front of Kuli and Beauty Eric

flew out i also got out and ran to him to 'stop' him Eric:"ey you step right here for a minute" Kuli:"me?" Eric:"no that bitch behind you now come here" Me:"Eric stop umh...leave her just drive me home please" Kuli:*what's going on here" Me:"Eric please just...leave this bitch" I pulled him to the car and I looked at Kuli with a smile on my face. Now look at me I'm sad again I got into the car Me:"and then? Would you gacr just beat her up?" Him:"yeah let's get going?" Me:"just drive me home" Him:"stop crying" He drove us to the house and I was quite all this time if Eric causes a scene with Lwazi that saves me the time when he stopped a tow truck came out of nowhere. Me;"and then?" Him:"they are here for the car" Me:"oh" I walked inside with him right behind me we found Lwazi busy watching football Lwazi:"hey love" I clicked my tongue and walked upstairs hey love my foot I took out some track pants and my black vest Lwazi barged in with a bloody nose okay

Eric went overboard Me:"what happened?"
Him:"what did that bitch tell you?" Me:"that you
fucked her" Him:"she'll regret it...she is lucky I
decided to forgive her drugging me now I slept
with her" I shrug and went into the bathroom
and got the first aid kit. Me:"are you wiping
blood with the shirt Lwazi?" Him:"want it to drip
on the carpet?" Me:"now it's better to ruin the
shirt? Take it off you idiot" He scoffed and took
off the shirt I got on his lap with my legs
wrapping around him Him:"and you
automatically believed her" Me:'what did you
want me to think she..." Him:"ouch" Me:"sorry
but you didn't tell me that she drugged you,she
was giving you information on me and you
believed her" Him:"it was the truth" Me:"and this
is the truth too drugged or not you should have
told me" He kept on flinching as I tried to wipe
the blood away Me:"stand still you idiot"
Him:"call me idiot again and I'll beat you"
Me:"stop acting like one then Lwazi do you have

any idea how it felt when she said that? All because she is dating Cuman and I know him"

Him:"I'm sorry I'll fix this I promise she shouldn't have messed with me" He wiped my tears using his thumbs. Him:"I'm sorry for all of this and I love you, I'd never cheat on you. You are the one for me" I pushed the cotton hard on his nose.

Me:"you better remember that now where is Eric?" Him:"that one left after punching me"

Me:'with what cause his car got towed"

Him:"one car gets towed another is delivered"

Me:"when will you buy me a Lamborghini?".

Him:"suck me and I'll buy it" Me:"I'm done doing that for you since I found out that your dick was in Kuli's rotten virgina" Him:"I bathed though and a thousand times it was in you" I got off him and took my stuff. Me:"still no.." Him:"fine I'll be out for the day so do cook" Me:"who will be sucking you now? Unathi?" Him:"you when I get back" He banged the door just to return.

Him:"forgot a shirt" Me:"congratulations" I

shouted from the bathroom I washed my hands and went downstairs to make myself some food Kuli messed with the wrong couple. .

KULI I hate what just happened after school that I just changed and went to Unathi's house I found her already studying like on the first day.

Me:"can we talk?" Her:"what do you want? To sleep with my boyfriend too" Me:"stop being a bitch...I just want to know who is that white guy

from earlier" Her:"Lwazi's Mafia brother in law"

Me:"mafia?" She nod tapping her pen on the

book. Me:"how do you know that?" Her:"being

Rori's real friend really helps" Me:"so he's

a.....umh I have to go" I quickly stood up and literally ran out if there so I'm dealing with the

mafia's. I was lost in my own world when this Gusheshe pulled up and Lwazi stepped up.

Him:"don't even think about it" Me:"about what?"

He smirked and walked towards me. Him:"get in

the car" Me:"I'll walk" Him:"get in the fucking

car" He pulled me so hard that I collided with

the car I wanted to scream but I was already thrown in the car I wonder why I was even attracted to him he got into the front and sped off. Me:"please don't... Don't hurt me Lwazi I'm sorry" He stopped at this ditch out of nowhere I burst out and tried running away but he caught me and again pushed me against the car. He chuckled moving his hand through his forehead. Him:"you...you messed up you messed with my marriage" Me:"she...I..." Him:"she...I...what? You thought you could mess with my wife and I'd let you be?" I shook my head and I was welcomed with two hot slaps I felt my ears ringing I got my composure. Me:"please I'm sorry" Him:'not yet* Ever been trampled upon well that's what he did but he didn't touch my face he made sure that I learn a lesson and stopped when he was satisfied. Him:"never mess with me or my family.." He got down and picked me up by the chin Him:"I'll kill you next time and please go lay a charge against me I'll come for your entire

family understand me?" I quickly nod

Him:"good" He got up leaving me on the ground powerless he drove off leaving me there I

quickly got up and dialed Cumanis number and thank God he quickly answered. Me:"please I

need your help" Him:"Lwazi beat you up and left you in a ditch I know" He burst out laughing

Me:"what's funny? Can you come and get me

please" Him:"im kinda busy" Me:"Cumanis please it's scary here what if I get rapped or worse"

Him:"give me an hour and I'll be there"

Me:"Cumanis please I think he broke my ribs"

Him:"that's not my problem I'll be done once I'm done here so you relax take a chill pill or call an

uber" Then he hung up i pulled myself up if this

is what Rori meant when she said Lwazi will do anything once he sees her tears then i give it to

her she's good shame

[03/09, 07:35] Mk: My handsome monster-

Our holy matrimony . . Episode 37 . .

KULI . . I waited for Cumanis till I got tired I

called him and he answered. Me:"where are you?" Him:"I'm at home why?" Me:"but...but i thought i asked for your help Cumani I'm scared" Him:"oh you still stuck at that place I thought you called a uber" Me:"please come get me" Him:"I'm coming relax" He hung up and then I had to wait and it was getting really dark I'm stuck at this ditch and my so called boyfriend is not taking this seriously. He came at exactly 19:30 pm and it was creepy, the moment the car parked up he got up hands in his pockets I slowly walked towards him just to be welcomed by a slap across the face. Him:"never call me over for your nonsense again" I held on to my cheek. Me:"what's wrong with you" Him:"get in the fucking car now" I didn't wait to be told twice I just ran to the passenger side and put on the seatbelt he got into his side,started the ignition and drove off instead of driving me to my house he drove me to his. Me:"why are we here?" Him:"what do you

think we are here for? Now get out of the car"
Why is he being rude cause sometimes he's
lovey dovey I got out and followed him inside
the house he threw himself on the couch and
drank his whisky. Him:"go take a shower"
Arguing with him seems worthless right now so
i went upstairs to his room and took a shower i
finished up and applied some body lotion
believe me my body hurt like hell so I wore his
shirt and sandals I went back downstairs.
Me:"do you have some painkillers?" Him:"I'll give
them to you when we go to bed" Me:"but I'm in
pain now' Him;"call Lwazi he'll send them"
Me:"Cumani" Him:"what were you thinking
upsetting Rori, you are playing with fire right
there" I sat down besides him Me:"how do you
know it was Rori" He shook his head side to
side with a smile on his face. Him:"I know Lwazi
goes crazy when it's about Rori these days and
anyway he called me telling me to keep my girl
in check... Do you want to die?" Me:"would he

kill me for just Rori's tears?" He burst out laughing Him:"tears are his ticking point.. The first person who made her cry is dead not buried burnt" I swallowed a chunk of saliva. Me:"you're joking right?" Him:'continue pissing Rori and you'll see if I'm joking" Me:"can't you talk to him" Him:"I actually don't care what he does to you all I want is to have him and Eric off my fucking back" Me:"mxm I'm going to bed my body hurts" Him:"I'll be there in a few" Me:"the pills please" He stood up and took his cellphone Him:"let's go your highness" I walked ahead of him and he was right behind me when I got into the bedroom I threw myself on the bed my entire intestines were on fire. My phone rang and I took it and it was Lwazi Me:"what do you want?" Him:"bitch im horny as fuck...'" Me:"so?" Him:"and I'm sleeping on the couch" Me:"why are you telling me?" Him:'fix your mess I want you to call Rori and apologies even cry if you have to I don't care but I ain't sleeping on no

fucking couch with Lil Wayne Lollipop popping behind me" Me:"I don't care leave me alone"
Him:"here is the funny thing I want you to apologies to my wife as of now, I want to hear her phone ringing then after a few minutes or hour she calls me to bed...and remember Cumani can't protect you from my reach I have a vast one almost like God but I sin more than doing good so I'm hanging up now so do as I say and you and your family will be safe understand?" Me:"I'm not scared of you. I'll go to the cops, I'll ruin you Lwazi" He burst out laughing. Him:"when you get there ask for Detective Adams he'll be of great help then after ask for a bullet proof vest and helmet for your entire family love" "Oh so now you are calling some bitch love huh?" Him:"no...and you do as I say now or I will finish what I started and it won't be pretty" He hung up and when i looked up I found Cumani standing over me.
Me:"what?' Him:"nothing darling just that you

messed with the wrong family" Me:"why are you so scared of them?*" Him:"me scared? You seriously don't know who you messing with so let me break it down for you" He threw the pill bottle at me. Him:"that white guy who was driving Rori is the boss and he is merciles so he's what he does he is the protector of the Mkhize family" Me:"so?" Him:"you make Rori angry, you make Lwazi angry and make Lwazi angry you make Karabo angry, make Karabo angry you make Mpho angry and then make Mpho angry you make Eric angry and out of all those people there are two you don't want to reach' Me:"I'm guessing Rori and Eric" He shook his head Him:"Karabo and Eric see those two a trigger happy" Me:"and you guys what do you do?" Him:"that's not important what's important is that I'm your last chance of survival" Me:"so you'll protect me right?" Him:"uh uh love you better hope and pray I don't break up with you cause you are dead now good night" He got into

bed and switched off his bed side lamp what is going on, I switched off mine but my phone beeped I looked at the message and it was a picture of my family with the *still waiting for that call* I just dialed Rori's number "You messed with the Queen" Nxa jack ass Rori picked up bysy giggling. Her:"what do you want?" Me:"friend..." Her:"friend? Did you just call me your friend?...ayo babe this bitch just called me friend" I heard them laughing and that pierced my heart. Me:"Rori I just called to apologies" Her:"apology accepted and I'm sorry for being bitchy just now I miss my friend and I'd like to have her back" Me:"really?" Her:"mmh Kuli we were like sisters and I'd like that back" I smiled. Me:"thanks friend" She hung up on me I guess Lwazi is off my back for now. . RORI After she hung up Lwazi burst out laughing like crazy he was laying on his tummy on the bed. Me:"stop doing that" Him:"i even believed you....you should get an acting job" Me:"why am

I needed to lie again?" Him:"that girl is going to cause trouble so if she believes that we're still after her she'll back off" Me:"I see now can I get my food back" Him:"yes madam foodie... I'll feed you even" I chuckled and of course I was fed then given a foot rub now he's one thing I don't take lightly to betrayal and Kuli should know that but hey she'll find out tomorrow. Next day I woke up to the intercom making noise and Lwazi was dead besides me so I rolled out of bed and went to answer. Me:" yes" "Wear your gym clothes we're going for a run" Me:"fine" I put the intercom down i went to the bathroom to clean up then I wore my leggings with a black and pink vest I wore my Nike trainers tied my hair into a messy bun. I'm sleepy and it's 4:00am I walked downstairs to find Eric coming out of the kitchen with two water bottles gosh this guy is hot I yawned.. Me:"I'm tired please" Him:"i seriously don't care now come" He opened the door and first we did a

few warm ups then it began. . TO BE
CONTINUED

[03/09, 07:36] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . Episode 38 . .

Rori The run back home was filled with me
crying and Eric laughing at me. Me:"i hate you i
swear" Him:"let's get going " Me:"I'm tired
please" Him:"we are going home now ain't we?"
Me:"can't we just walk?" Him:"no so hurry up
chop chop" Me:"chop chop... Watch me chop
your dick" I ran towards him God knows i was
tired we ran back home and today i did as
yesterday I had to resemble a gun and shoot
again. When we were done I went into kitchen
to find a full blown breakfast I didn't even care I
just sat down and dished up for two Lwazi was
smiling at this he even kissed the side of my
head. Him:"you tired?" I nod as I took a bite of
the toast. Eric:"no wonder you can't run"
Lwazi:"leave her alone...eat all you want baby"
Me:" " I was eating like my life depended

on it this side my body hurts I was having some cornflakes just to top it up, Eric went to take a shower so I was left with Lwazi who was busy kissing the side of my head. Him: "you okay?" I nod Me: "I'm fine stop worrying, i even hit the bulleyes" He chuckled Him: "I'm proud of you..." Me: "my body hurts though I hate running" Him: "I'll give you a full body massage after school I promise" I smiled Me: "thank you so are you driving me to school?" He shook his head and took my bowl to the sink. Me: "but I miss flaunting you around to my friends" Him: "I know but right now only Eric can do that... come I'll take you upstairs" I got off the high stool chair just to be picked up honeymoon style and led upstairs he even took me to the bathroom where we took an 'innocent' shower a quick one in fact we got out I mean today everything was done for me, I wore my tracksuits and school tee with the Jersey after doing everything I took my school bag and cellphone

Lwazi was busy dressing up too casual/formal

Me:"you going to the hotel?" Him:"only later

right now I'm going to the club" Me:"well have

fun" I pecked his lips with his hands on my

waist the moment I lifted my head he pulled me

closer and kissed my tummy. Him:"I love you

guys" Me:"we love you too" Him:"here you go"

He gave me two hundred rand I took his wallet

and took fifty. Me:*still got some from

yesterday" Him:"you better not be starving my

baby understand?" Me:"he's well fed now bye" I

kssed his forehead and walked out as slowly as

my aching body allowed downstairs the horrible

Eric was waiting for me. Him:"you look

horrible " Me:"mxm bloody mlungu wanya"

Him:"what?" Me:"I said I feel bloody horrible and

thanks to you" He gave me a stare before taking

my school bag from me. Him:"I'll act like a

believe you" Me:"you ain't got a choice but to

believe me...you know my body hurts like hell"

Him:"you'll be fine by tomorrow don't worry"

Me:"I hope so.. Mmh today we are doing black?

Nice" Him:"mmh...what are your plans after

school?" Me:"well I have a studio session and

that's about it" Him:"and tomorrow?"

Me:"nothing really just school then home why?

Want to take me out?" Him:"for a driving test

yes you need to have your own car" Me:"yay a

Lamborghini right?" Him:"even a Toyota corolla

would be fine" Me:"jeez I'd rather walk than

drive my grand dad's car thank you very much"

Him:"we'll talk about that later" Me:"so you

picking me up too?" Him:"mmh" Me:"God knows

I miss my husband" He parked in front of the

school gate I got out with my stuff and just

waved at him with a smile on my face to be

honest my back was killing me and that freaks

me cause my pregnancy is fragile so I can't risk

it and I can't worry Lwazi over nothing so I just

walked to school where Kuli was standing with

Unathi near our usual spot I smiled at them and

just hugged Unathi. Me:"hey friend"

Una:"morning mommy are you okay? You seem to be walking like a snail" Me:"had a terrible morning babe" Una:"too many rounds?" I chuckled Me:"no if only it was that I'd be happy but Eric is the reason I'm like this" She smiled and rubbed my tummy that's how much Unathi loves this baby I know if she was rich then my baby would be pampered. I went to hug Kuli Me:"morning Friend" I emphasize the last part. Kuli:"hi..umh how are you?" Me:"couldn't be better and you?" I'm just asking cause it's clear she's not okay she was even limping I shouldn't be laughing but no one gets to mess with my marriage and gets sympathy from me. Kuli:"I'm fine just a bit of muscle ache" Me:"sorry umh I'll give you some painkillers" Una:"painkillers? Should you even have those?" Me:"mmh some baby friendly shit don't stress" We walked to the assembly area and prayed then it was class time where I think I slept through out the first three chapters I was

seriously tired shame. I was shaken back to life by a teacher. Her:"are you okay? You've been sleeping for a while now" I rubbed my eyes and looked around me fuck I'm in class i was about to answer but i ran out going to the bathroom to throw up I threw up like my entire life depends on it after I went to rinse my mouth and washed my face. "Are you okay?" I nod Me:"I just need to go home I'll survive" Una:"I'll go tell the teacher then" Me:"thanks" She walked out leaving me to rest my head on the bathroom sink I hate Eric for this I told him I can't run, I took my phone and called Lwazi he picked up and sounded like he was walking Him:"ain't you supposed to be in class?" Me:"come pick me up tuu" Him:"what's wrong? You okay?" Me:"i don't know but my entire body hurts and anyway I'm just sleeping" Him:"okay I'll call Eric to..." Me:"I called you cause I want you to come and pick me up not your goon brother in law" Him:"I'm busy and..." Me:"fine I'll catch a taxi and go to my granny's

and don't follow me" Him:"Rori come on... Babe I'm busy this side" Me:"fine be busy I'm out"
Him:"if you dare hang up on me we won't get along,just relax im on my way" He hung up on me I'm hard on him I know but Eric is evil he'll just find something for me to do rather than sleep where as I just need to sleep,I went to class sat down and rested my head on my hands Una:"so the principal gave me the permission slip so let's go" Me:"thanks for the help umh Lwazi is coming to pick me up so he'll find me here sleeping" Kuli:"are you okay though?" I looked at her with an evil stare but quickly gave her a smile Me:"yeah I'm fine" She nod if it was up to me I'd never come back to school I just need to sleep for the entire 9months anyway for what seemed to be after an hour the teacher came to call me with Lwazi right behind her,he was the gentleman to even take my backpack my marriage is a killer and Lwazi being Lwazi he had this arrogant, scary

look on his face just because he's in my class.
Him:"you okay?" I shrug and got in the car he came to his side and got in. Him:"I'm sure you know if you are okay or not so what's wrong?"
Me:"I'm tired, my back hurts so I don't know what's wrong" Him:"I'm taking you to the doctor"
Me:"i just need to rest that's all so relax"
Him:"but I can't leave you at the house alone... Umh I'll take you with me to the hotel" Me:"what are you busy with there?" Him:"just a partnership deal I'm almost done" I yawned and just nod Him:"are you hungry?" Me:"uh uh just want to sleep and I was thinking" Him:"that's not a good thing" Me:"oh wow and what's that supposed to mean?" Him:"nothing so tell me what you were thinking about" Me:"mxxm forget it..." I looked outside the window I felt his hand on my thigh rubbing it. Him:"I'm sorry mama but mostly when you say that I have to do something crazy and tiring" Me:"oh so my plans bore you? Mxxm I understand" Him:"no they are

not boring just tiring at my part so what's the idea now?" Me:"how about we have sex on the rooftop?" We burst out laughing I don't know why I said that but I did hey. Him:"have you seen our house? If we fall we are dead all three of us" Me:"i know hey but on a serious note i don't think I can juggle the studio and school then Eric while pregnant and you know this pregnancy is fragile" Him:"okay so what do you have in mind?" Me:"let go of one" Him:"let me guess it's school" Me:"yeah it was going to happen anyway" Him:"okay umh we'll discuss that later so come" I nod and got out of the car we went into the hotel where we went to the private suite talk about fancy shit. Him:"I'm going downstairs to the boardroom so I'll be up to check on you" Me:"can I get some hot wings and salad?" Him:"I'll get the chef on it" Me:"thanks..." He pecked my lips and kissed my forehead Him:"rest I'll be back" I nod and just took off my uniform and got into bed lord

knows i need this more than anything.

[03/09, 07:36] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . Episode 39 . .

LWAZI . I was done in no time and went by
the kitchen to check on Rori's food Me:"is
everything ready Frank?" Frank:"almost done
sir" Me:"well bring them to my room with some
orange juice and some wine for me okay" He
nod Him:"I will get the waiter on it sir" I walked
away from the kitchen and got on the elevator
to the top floor,my phone rang and it was an
international number I answered hoping it's my
sister Me:"talk to me" ??:"Andrew it's Chrissy"
Me:"argh what do you want?" Her:"I'm in South
Africa and I was hoping you'd fetch me at the
Cape Town airport" Me:"and your hopes will be
in vein so if you don't mind bye" Her:"but i don't
know my way around here" Me:"then go back
home so bye" I hung up and got out of the lift I
walked into the room just to find Rori standing
by the balcony in the hotel robe so I just walked

in and went to wrap my hands around her waist getting her back to Earth. Me:"are you okay?" Her:"mmh i feel a lot better" Me:"you sure? You don't need anything else?" Her:"just my food I'm starving,and hurry up" Me:"the chef said he'll be done very soon" Her:"thank God umh I was thinking and no it's not having sex on the rooftop" Me:*okay what's up?" Her:"how about we spend the night here" Me:"are you sure cause Eric will be at the house..." Her:"thats why I want to sleep here I want to be away from him the baby needs it" I burst out laughing Me:"the baby needs it? Did he say that?" She nod with a grin on her face Me:"babe stop shielding yourself with the little guy he can't talk" Her:"yoh this one talks a lot he's always complaining and now he says he's hungry and tired" Me:"come here to papa and he'll give you a nice full body massage" Her:"soon you'll be telling me about an erection?" Me:"that's nature especially if you impregnated your wife"

Her:"good for you..." We walked to the bedroom and just then the waiter walked in and that made Rori extra happy she loves food like her life depends on it. I tipped the waiter and he left. Me:"your food is here" Her:"thank you..." I kissed her forehead and sat down with her joining in on her lunch. Her:"you expecting a call?" I quickly looked up at her Me:"umh no... Just I'm just going through some stuff that's all" Her:"you sure? You seem to be waiting for someone to call you" Me:"no I'm not babe come on" Her:"fine so can you put away your phone just this once" Me:"sorry now you have my fullest attention as always" Her:"yeah until you get that itch" Me:"let's not fight right now babe let's have this mini honeymoon okay" Her:"then give it to me" I looked at her and she gave me this fucked up look eyebrows raised, lip curved and she nod Me:"fine here you go" I gave her the phone and laid my head on her lap getting a head massage it's nice being married to a crazy bosal girl like

her I ain't changing that at all. . . RORI I had only three weeks to learn shooting, reassembling a gun and hacking only the basics so yeah when Eric left I was sad cause Lwazi won't be afraid of anyone but at least I get to rest which today was supposed to be like that i mean it's a Saturday and I'm at home with my baby wearing his shirt and sneakers in bed playing video games with my bae he even switched off his phone so no disturbance we still bonding well that's until the intercom in the bedroom went off Me:"pause the game I'll be back" Him:"you are losing anyway what's the use" Me:"just pause it" I pecked his lips and went to answer. Me:"yes?" Guard:"mam there is a woman here and she says she's here for the sir" Me:"what's her name?" Guard:"she said it's a surprise" I looked at Lwazi Me:"alright send her in" I put the phone down and walked downstairs I switched off the alarms then a knock came through so I opened the door just to be met by

this girl and bags I was expecting a hello or something but she just shoved me aside leaving her bags on the doorstep and me being me I was frozen on the door handle mouth hung open. Me:"O-kay and who are you?" Girl:"is Andrew here" Me:"oh it's you..." I chuckled Me:"in real life you look more fake whadup?" Her:"I said is Andrew here?" Me:"attitude in my house is not allowed from strangers only I get to have attitude so check yourself..." She rolled her eyes and began going up the stairs I ran after her and pulled her back. Me:"bitch check yourself now" Her:"I said where is Andrew?" Me:"why should I tell you where my husband is? You ain't even greeted me" And then Lwazi just had to walk out all shirtless and shit.

Lwazi:"babe what's.... Christina?"

Chrissy:"Andrew..." She had this smile on her face so i just stepped in front of her with my own smile. Me:"ooh ahh Andrew yay...now off my stair case" Chrissy:"what's..." Me:"off my

stair case...come off and get out you saw Andrew yay I'm happy for you now off" She folded her arms so I just shrug and pulled her down the stairs with her hair. Me:"off my staircase means exactly that get the fuck off my stair case" Lwazi:'Rori stop it" Me:"my house my rules.. Now bye Felicia" I pushed her out and closed the door on her face even dusting my hands off. Me:"what? She's rude though" He shrug Him:"didn't say anything did I?" [Door knock] Me:"name and address" The shit made Lwazi burst out laughing. I just opened the door. Me:"yes?" Chrissy:"I'm done..." I shut the door again Lwazi:"Rori stop" She knocked again Me:"my house my rules..." I opened the door Me:"yes?" Chrissy:" can I please see Andrew?" I grinned. Me:"much better come in..." I made way for her and she walked in I closed the door. The thing I call a husband was busy with his Apple. Him:"sit down Chrissy and what do you want here?" Me:"uh uh how did you fucking find

us? And didn't I tell you to stay away?" I folded my arms waiting for an explanation.

Chrissy:"umh can I talk to Andrew privately please" Me:"hehe privately she says yoh girl you got high hopes yazi..." I sat down on Lwazi's lap which he wrapped his arms around my waist gladly. Lwazi:"speak now" She looked at my smiley self Chrissy:"well umh Andrew I thought I could hide this from you but you are going to be a father" Lwazi:"yeah I know" He rubbed my tummy kissing my cheek. Me:"she's a prophet babe" Chrissy:"no I mean I'm pregnant_" Ever had temporary miscarriage well I did and my brain just switched from nice to aggro.

Lwazi:"what are you talking about?" Chrissy:"I'm pregnant with your baby Andrew..." Me:"let go of me now Lwazi" Lwazi:"uh uh sit down" I tried scratching his hands damn I just want to get my hands on her right now. Chrissy:"I'm three months pregnant and you are the father"

Lwazi:"and how sure are you?" Chrissy:"cause

you are the last guy I slept with" Me:"bitch start running... oh my Mphahle ancestors help me for I am being tested" Lwazi:"babe calm down"
Me:"don't you fuck with me...let go of me now"
Lwazi:"no so relax...Chrissy please leave I need to talk to my wife alone" Chrissy:"I don't have a place to stay Andrew I'm broke and Carlos..."
Me:"I don't run an orphanage so get out of my face now..." Lwazi:"why did you even come here?" Chrissy:"cause my baby needs a father"
Me:"let go of me Lwazi and I mean now"
Lwazi:"Rori calm down please" I was boiling beyond the word boiling. Chrissy:"Andrew i don't mean to cause any rift between you too but I don't have anywhere else to go"
Me:"Lwazi...Lwazi let me go please i won't do anything to her just let me go" He was reluctant but finally let me go I slowly stood up staring at Chrissy I just walked up the stairs to my room, then the safe in the closet I unlocked it and took out my gun and checked the bullets and they

were there so I walked out and went down the stairs. Me:"okay I'm done with this stupid circus you bitch get out of my flipping house" Lwazi jumped up. Him:"woah babe relax that ain't necessary, she'll go stay at the hotel"
Me:"whose hotel? Ain't no bitch whose gonna suck my husband dry while I'm still here capish"
Him:"okay I hear you but no killing come on" He wrapped his arms around my waist and pecked my lips. Him:"give me the gun please" Me:"move or I'll shoot you then your bitch" He picked me up like I'm a piece of paper and placed me on his shoulder walking with me upstairs to our bedroom. Him:"think will you" Me:"I'm thinking very well thank you" Him:"no you are not, so what's the plan? Kill her and who'll clean up?"
Me:"you since you brought her here" He snatched the gun away from me and threw it on the bed. Him:"calm yourself down and think"
Me:"what if she's lying? She doesn't look pregnant to me" Him:"then the doctor will prove

it" Me:'you can pay a doctor to lie you know that right?" Him:"i know that's why we'll be there"
Me:"you and who?I'm not into that" Him:"then calm down" Me:"stop telling me to calm down I hate that especially when I'm angry" Him:"I'm sorry babe I'm sorry for everything" Me:"then fix it understand" I sat down arms folded sulking even. . To be continued

[03/09, 07:36] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . Episode 40 .

LWAZI . Rori just threw herself on the bed and screamed holding on to her tummy.

Me:"babe...are you okay?" Her:"of course not your ex is downstairs" Me:"i meant is the baby okay" Her:"of course the baby if fine... Now let me think for a bit will you" Me:"about what?"

Her:"that cockroach from Mexico" Me:"no name calling babe come on" Her:"oh yeah I forgot she's pregnant with your baby yay" Me:"I didn't say I believe that in fact I don't I just have to take her to the doctor tomorrow" She kept quite

staring at the ceiling Me:"are you listening?
Rori?" She jumped up and squeezed me Me:"my
bones woman" Her:"if I ain't a genius than it's
witchcraft... Damn I'm good" Me:"share okay"
She kissed my cheek so hard Me:"Rori" Her:"I
got an idea and I know it's hella dope so please
don't stand in my way" Me:"you lost me now
babe" _ Her;"be found baby be found" She
pecked my lips and stood up with a grin on her
face now I know that Rori is manipulative to a
big point,she'll make you do something you
don't want to do you'll apologize for something
you didn't do all because of her words and now I
wonder what's the plan here. . RORI I have a
plan yes and if this bitch she'll just come here
and make an idiot out of my husband she has
another thing coming,I'll make her sorry and
Lwazi will kill her himself now that's the power
of manipulation people do things for you. I
walked down the stairs with Lwazi screaming
out my name but he'll have to deal with my way

of doing things now. The madam Chrissy was busy fiddling with her phone Me:"umh would you like anything to drink?" Her:"no I'm good" Me:"i see anything to eat then?" Her:"no I'm good too where is Andrew?" Me:"your baby daddy is sulking upstairs but he'll be down soon" I got myself some juice now here is the plan give her enough rope to hang herself then I'll stand back and Lwazi will take care of her himself. I went to seat down in front of her. Me:"so when do you think you can schedule addoctors appointment?" Her:"umh..I was thinking next week" Me:"okay I'll get the guard to take your bags upstairs" Her:"why are you being so kind all of a sudden?" Me:"you are carrying my husband's baby so I actually don't have a choice" Her:"you do you can be mean" Me:"yeah not happening my baby is going nowhere" Lwazi:"baby I made the doctors appointment for Chrissy" He said walking down the stairs Me:"it's fine love she said she'll go

next week she's tired" Lwazi;"that's bullshit"
Chrissy:"Andrew please" Me:"Lwazi she'll go so
relax" Lwazi:"Rori follow me now" Me;"still
watching a movie" Lwazi;"I wasn't asking you
now come" I slowly stood up and walked to him
and he just pulled me into the kitchen.

Me:"`whats wrong?" Him:"what are you doing?"

Me:"nothing just supporting your baby mama"

Him:"oh so now you believe she's pregnant?"

Me:"I don't care now let's go please" I pat his
shoulder and went back to being 'nice' well
actually im planning the ultimate revenge on a
silver platter cause no one will threaten my
child's future and walk off Scot free

F

[03/09, 19:06] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . Episode 41 . .

RORI Lwazi was sulking the entire day even
at dinner and I didn't care i don't have to
explain myself to him not even a tiny bit i got
out of the shower with a towel wrapped around

my body and went to put on some body lotion and wore my undies with Lwazi busy staring at me or past me who knows cause he was quite baby tendencies you'd swear he's the one pregnant. I pushed off the towel and just stood in front of the mirror and rubbed my tummy. Me:"boy boy pop out already please I'd like to see the bump now" "Put your clothes on you are pregnant for crying out loud" Me:"oh wow so now you can talk? It's hot" Him:"don't mess with me...." Me:"don't shout at me Lwazi I'm not a baby I think it's best you keep quiet now" Him:"what are you playing at huh?" Me:"I'm not playing at anything I'm just getting ready for bed" Him:"nxa I'm going to sleep in the guest room I can't be here with you if you are lying to me" Me:"stop being a baby Lwazi I'm not doing anything okay... You don't tell me about your plans why should you know about mine?" Him:"I'm your flipping husband..." Me:"I'm your flipping wife so trust me I'm doing this for us..."

For our baby" Him:"then tell me maybe I'll help"
Me:"I don't need your help" Him:"then I'm out"
Me:"Lwazi come on baby.... I'm not doing
anything bad I just want to know what she's
doing here that's all" Him:"I want her out of this
house Rori" Me:"and he's shouting at me like it's
my problem... Lwazi that girl is up to
something" Him:"i hate it when you are right"
Me:"and I love it when you are angry" I stuck my
tongue out at him and kissed his cheek I love
Lwazi even though we met under scary
situations. I took my laptop yes I got it with a
pink Mickey mouse cover and my screen cover
is a drawing of Lwazi he even has it as his
own screen cover, I face timed my favorite
mentor Eric and my sister in law answered.
Me:"hello" Her:"hey Mam Mkhize" Me:"you just
made me sound old when im actually not"
Her:"soon you'll be called mom" Me:"still young
though so where is your husband? I need his
help" Her:"with what?" I looked at Lwazi besides

me. Me:"you know what I'll send you guys info on everything I need so talk tomorrow"

Her:"what are you hiding from my little brother?"

Me:'nothing he's right here but it's private so yeah can I send you guys an email or a video?"

Her:"okay cause Eric is not here now" Me:"good now bye I have to go to bed" Her:"night night" I

hung up and now I just have hack into that bitch's phone and laptop then I'm home free I put my laptop away and pulled up the blankets.

Me:"good night babe" Him:"nyunight nyunight

futsek.." Me:"what did I do now?" Him:"what do

you think you did?" Me:"okay I'm sorry I love you papa can I sleep now" Him:"I'll strangle you to

death I tell you" Me:"I said I love you though now what do you want?" Him:"the truth"

Me:"you'll know as soon ad I have everything in check I promise you... Now hold me please"

Him:"I'm just doing this for my baby not for you"

Me:"yeah yeah now hold me before I push you off this bed" Him:"I'd kill you this time around

Rorisho Mkhize" Me:"that's so cute I love you" I pecked his lips which in turn was a long kiss i pulled away. Me:"good night Lwazi"
Him:'good night love" He opened up his arms for me and I laid on his chest now that's the thing for me this is what I'll fight for my marriage and hearing his heart beat all night,this is all I'll fight for just feeling his love around me and his warmth just makes me feel safe. . The next day I woke up and Lwazi was not besides me and i wasn't used to that. He walked in holding a tray of food. Him:"morning babe" Me:"morning babe...so what did I do to deserve this?" Him:"I'm doing this for my baby don't fool yourself" Me:'wow that hurts so bad"
He chuckled and just placed the tray on my lap giving me a morning kiss. He pulled away and kissed my forehead Him:"i love you Rori" Me:"i love you too Lwazi" Him:"please do enjoy breakfast in bed my lovely baby mama I'm going to take a shower" Me:"yeah have fun and

thanks for this" He wiggled his eyebrows and walked into the bathroom I know all of this breakfast in bed stuff wont last he wants something and once he gets it I'll have to make my own breakfast. . CHRISSEY I got woken up by my loud laptop and it was Carlos face timing me so I quickly answered. Me:"yeah?" Him:"oh so now you don't call cause you live with your stupid boyfriend" Me:"don't say that I'm not enjoying being here okay that bitch has him wrapped around her little finger" Him:"whatever just wanted to tell you that the doctor guy is ready for you" Me:"so everything is on point no way it'll backfire" Him:"yes so relax and string them along till it's time" Me:"yeah I have to go now before she walks in" Him:"how old is this girl?*" Me:"seems like she's still a teen" Him:"then relax you've been in this game for long you'll be fine I got your back" Me:"I know and thank you but I have to go now" Him:"bye" I hung up and just got out of bed and went to

freshen up so now that I have the fake doctor everything is on point.

F

[03/09, 19:06] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . Episode 42 . Rori
I finished with my breakfast in bed so I got out
of bed and went to the bathroom to freshen up
this side Lwazi was still in there so he's
scrubbing himself cause Chrissy is here I tell
you, I found him standing in front of the mirror
shaving i found myself laughing i mean he's
clean but he shaves. Me:"what's happening
Mkhize?" Him:"im shaving so what's funny?"
Me:"you cleaning a place that's already clean I
mean you just shaved two days ago... she
has you in some June-July vibe" Him:"I don't
know what you are talking about so I'm going to
ignore you" I nod and just put on some
toothpaste Me:"mmh today you shaved
everywhere I'm sure" Him:"futsek maan just
leave me alone" I even chocked on some

toothpaste while laughing at him. I cleared my throat Me:"you ain't gonna shag no bitch in my house just so you know...so you shaved for nothing" I washed my face and just left him there I got in bed took my laptop and wrote Eric an email this bitch is messing with my marriage and I don't like it at all. I love Eric he called immediately so I answered with a grin on my face Him:"you still sleeping?" Me:"yeah I'm tired still" Him:"get out of bed now shawty" Me:"no you idiot leave me alone and will you help me or not?" Him:"I'll help but you'll have to tell me what's the plan" Me:"well as I said in my email I have a feeling that she's here for a reason and it's big so I want her to reveal her plan instead of just throwing her out giving her ample time to plan whatever it is I mean she knows where we live now" Him:"mmh so it's keep your friends close....." Me:"but your enemies closer" Him:"I see...I'll get you the best guys don't worry they'll be there before midday" Me:"thanks can you do

that background check on her for me please I don't trust her" Him:"I'm on it" Me:"thanks sir...I gotta go" Him:"take care of my nephew" Me:"if he takes care of me I will" I hung up and gave my aftershave husband my attention he smelt like the entire aftershave. Me:"Lwazi my love you smell like the entire aftershave did you bathe in it" Him:"fuck you maan don't you have assignments to write?" Me:"come here" Him:"leave me alone" I was laughing I just crawled to the edge of the bed and got on my knees Me:"come here my love" Him:"you are making fun of me mose" Me:"askies love mara you smell like aftershave... Come here" He walked towards me with this serious look on his face. Me:"so where are you going?" Him:"nowhere why?" Me:"haa babe you are shining like a newly bought car but you are not going anywhere" Him:"Rori stop it maan" Me:"sorry my love....baby I love you with all of me" Him:"I love you too" Me:"can you do

something for me please just for a few hours"
Him:"what?" Me:"can you take the girlfriend out today I want to get busy around the house"
Him:"hell no I ain't doing that" Me:'please babe I'll give a good suck tonight" Him:"you can do that but I'm still not doing that I'm not taking anyone out" Me:"please my love" I kissed his cheek Me:"please I'll be highly indebted to you"
Him:"stop doing that" Me:"do this for me please.... I'll do something for you tonight" He cleared his throat. Him:"fine stop rubbing me up the wrong way" Me:"give me a kiss..." He arched his eyebrow and poked my forehead Me:"you know you want to" Him:"I'm going to dress up"
Me:"but you'll do what I asked right?" Him:"yeah sure but I want to see you in some lingerie tonight deal?" Me:"fine deal" Him:"then I'll be on my best behavior I'll even smile and tell her jokes" Me:"thanks love and remember you are to come back when I call you and no kissing or fucking or else no lingerie show and no Rori"

Him:"got it so how do I look?" Me:"ugly now bounce" Him:"wow but I love you" Me:"I love you too" He pecked my lips and just took his car keys. Now the cameras are being delivered today thanks to Eric and they'll be hidden so I will know what that bitch is doing in my house i took my laptop and tried hacking into her cellphone which I succeeded on the third try. Me:"gotcha now as I said my house my rules,soo let's see who called you and who did you call..." I went through her call log and bitch called Lwazi a few weeks back while Eric was here I see but he didn't tell me. Me:"now let me download an app for you just for fun" I downloaded a call recorder and sent it to her i know she'll open it cause it'll come as an ad. Me:"now your laptop oh my Mphahlele ancestors I love you" Pay back is a bitch shame and I love being a bitch more than anything. . Chrissy Seeing Andrew walking down the stairs all handsome and stuff just does things

to me I still love this guy, but now he's got that fat bimbo

Him:"let's go" Me:"huh?" Him:"get up and follow me" Me:"where are we going?" Him:"jeez just get up okay or I'll go back upstairs to my wife" Me:"okay I'm coming" I stood up taking my phone and followed him we went to his car and through out the whole drive he didn't even look at me and when i speak i get one word answers

Me:"Andrew?" Him:"what now?" Me:"do you love that girl?" Him:"that girl is my wife and the mother of my unborn baby and she has a name" Me:"do you love her?" Him:"yes I love her anything else you need to know?" I shook my head Him:"good cause I'm doing this for her,she's the one that asked me to take you out i don't even buy your whole pregnancy story so don't bore me" Me:"I'm sorry" Him:"zip it.... What would you like to do" Me:"anything is fine" He just nod and got out of the car this is not going as planned I want him back and I'll get him back to me where he

belongs. . KULI I was at the mall when I saw Mr high and mighty with another girl now this is great i wonder what Rori will say now cause she got me beaten to a pulp. Beauty:"ain't that your friend's husband?" Me:"that's him shame he is cheating on her with a model like girl" We laughed and even did a high five Beauty:"men though cause she's pregnant he's getting some on the side" Me:"serves her right she'll be back home with us" Beauty:"she's hot though i mean look at her hair she's flawless" I chuckled Me:"and Rori was life she's got the ass and curves he'll stay" Beauty:"yeah right man love then thin not fat and pregnant" Me:'let me call her I want to hear her reaction" Beauty:"put it on loud speaker I want to hear her shattered voice" Me:"okay...umh it's ringing" Rori answered on the third ring.. Her:"hello" Me:"hey friend guess what" Her:"I don't have time for guessing games I'm busy" Me:"well I'm looking at your husband here at the mall with some model" Her:"cool is

that all? Cause if you thought I'd be hurt you are wrong she lives with us and I sent them there"

Me:"oh" Her:"oh can i hang up and you know very well Lwazi won't like this and this time you are dead babe so bye and stop trying to tear my marriage apart" She hung up leaving me scared as hell Beauty:"so that ain't how we planned"

Me:"shut up and let's go before he sees us" I walked away from her and went into the shoe shop. I messed up and if she tells her crazy husband he'll kill me fuck there is no winning with this girl Cumani won't help me so I gotta do something to get him to help me maybe having his baby will change his mind who knows

[03/09, 19:06] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony .. Episode 43 ..

RORI God help me for I am surrounded by fake bitches left right and center but I'll deal with them one by one and each at the right time now I just have to deal with Mrs nachos Prato's

then the little skanks will follow, the intercom rang so I went to answer. Me: "yes?" "It's me mam...the CCTV people are here" Me: "cool come in" I unlocked the front door and some guys walked in with the guard cool. Me: "can you get started please" Them: "sure" Me: "cool so one in the kitchen, study, right here and upstairs in the bedrooms and don't forget they must all have some audio" Guy1: "so basically every room should have a camera" Me: "yep and make sure no one can't see them please.... I need the IT guy so come to me" Guy2: "I'm here sexy lady" I faked a chuckle Me: "don't get on my nerves I'm married and grumpy so just seat down" The others laughed and each one disappeared into the rooms I was left with this colored guy. Me: "I need you to hack into this black laptop using my laptop but hide the IP address" Him: "cool and the name is Vernon" I pat his shoulder Me: "nice now get cracking" I sat down across him and took my juice then my phone rang God

I hope its not Kuli and her tricks cause I'm not in the mood for her. Me:"hello" Eric:"hey you better hurry up with your plan that girl is up to no good" Me:'okay talk to me" Eric:"she's Carlos Rodriguez's younger sister" Me:"okay should i know him?" Eric:"no but they are collectors almost like scavengers" Me:"so what does she want from me?" Eric:"I don't know but I sent you all her details via email so be careful please" Me:"thank you.." Eric:"I did say I'd protect you so I'll keep digging" Me:"same here so I'll update you and please don't tell Lwazi about this" Eric:"okay mommy" Me:"wee the uncle has spoken bye" Eric:"bye" I hung up with a grin on my face now this is what I call family.

Vernon:"did he promise you marriage or something?" Me:"please know I can smack your face off...so focus on what you are doing" I opened up my email and went through the file Eric sent me and I like what I see shame I'm going to hurt her. Vernon:"I'm done" Me:"that's

cool Mr pretty face...." I took the laptops and went through Chrissy's emails and damn this girl is naughty as they come now I forwarded everything to my email account then deleted the evidence even from the bin folder. I put it where I found it and to be truthful the cameras were not visible I could only see the images from the rooms just how I like it. . CHRISSEY The shopping with Andrew was just that shopping and he even bought lingerie for his 'wife' right in front of me Me:"can we go now please?" Him:"no wait i still have to buy some juice for Rori so let's go" Me:"I'm tired Andrew I'm tired it's always Rori this,Rori that iit's frustrating" Him:"okay and why are you acting like my side chick? Cause you are seriously causing a scene and it's so not sexy" Me:"just take me home Andrew" Him:"have fun walking" This guy is heartless anyway we went to buy those juice for his glorified wife and then we went home finally after his wife called him to come back. Me:"I

think it's best I move out" Him:"you are not going anywhere until I get conformation about being you being pregnant" Me:"but I am"
Him:"then we'll see.. " He stopped in the driveway and he got out I'm guessing running to his wife I guess and I was right cause the moment we walked in he ran to her and they kissed can't they see me he even picked her up making all those disgusting sounds so I just cleared my throat and only then did they remember that they have a visitor Andrew looked at me with crazy eyes. Him:"what?"
Rori:"babe come on put me down please"
Him:"but love I want you to try on something for me" Rori:"I will now down boy" He put her down and just picked up the shopping bags disappearing into the kitchen. Rori:"how was your day out?" Me:"fine" She nod busy sucking in her lollipop I wonder why she's smiling.
Me:"I'm going to my room" Her:"okay have fun love" She sat down busy giggling now this bitch

is trying me I swear, I went upstairs and decided to change into some shorts and T-shirt maybe he'll notice me. I went back downstairs and found them making out on the couch they were going hard at it she has to go and fast. I went back to my room and then called Carlos but he didn't pick up.

F

[03/09, 19:06] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . . Episode 44 .

RORI We were having breakfast and this side Lwazi was busy rubbing my thigh under the table so believe me it's hard eating while he's doing that. Lwazi:"so when are we going to the doctor Chrissy" She choked on her food.

Me:"umh it's fine I think she can book with Dr Lloyd he's great" Lwazi;"and that's not your doctor so how do you know him' Me:"Google my love,so what do you say Chrissy?" Chrissy:"umh okay I'll book it" Me:"good I'll give you his card" She gave me a weak smile see what I mean I'm

giving her rope to hang herself I know about this doctor from her emails with her brother and they bought him too, so I know she's dancing on the inside. Me:"and I'm coming too so dont even think about tricking Lwazi or so help me God" I took my plate and Lwazi's then just put on the gloves to wash them we only use the dishwasher if there is a load so it's just two plates and two cups well that's until the bitch came with her plate and she had this smirk on her face. Me:"don't think about it baby cakes I ain't your maid" I got a kiss on the cheek. Lwazi:"I'm going to the hotel so I'll be back quite late today" Me:"okay love see you later" Lwazi:"I love you". Me:"and I love you more every day". He pecked my lips and kissed my forehead that's him not wanting to go anywhere. Me:"go already" Lwazi:"be safe for me" Me:"I'm a tough cookie baby and you know it" Lwazi:"fine...oh bye Chrissy and you better make that appointment" He kissed my cheek and took his

stuff he left us now we can talk like women
Me:"listen I'm not your bff so don't step on my
toes cause I'll give you the African experience
understand? Now finish washing the dishes" I
took off the gloves and walked away busy
whistling, I went to watch some TV I mean it's
all I do now. . . CHRISSEY Bitch thinks she has
the upper hand yet she doesn't know that the
doctor she suggested is the same doctor I was
going to suggest so she just made things easier
for me a whole lot easier I'm telling you. I
washed the dishes I mean soon she'll be
shipped off to Mexico once Andrew believes I'm
pregnant I heard her talking on the intercom so
someone is here to visit so I finished up and
went in the living room. Rori:"hey why didn't you
tell me you were coming guys?" Girl1:"we
thought we could surprise you friend and I
missed my Godchild" Rori:"I'm sure he misses
you too friend" I cleared my throat and they
turned to look at me. Rori:"and then? Did you

choke on something?" Me:"I thought you'd introduce me" Rori:"oh wow you have a brain how wonderful... And you are again?" I swallowed my anger Me:"hey im Chrissy Andrew's girlfriend" Rori:"yeah don't push me bitch...guys this is Lwazi's ex bitch and his so called baby mama" Girl 1:"and she just had to say girlfriend ..I'm Unathi by the way" She folded her arms and rolled her eyes cocky the second one greeted me with a smile and handshake. Her:"I'm Kuli nice meeting you" Me:"nice meeting you too" Her:"cool". Rori rolled her eyes with a smirk on her face these two seem to hate each other jackpot for me. Me:"well I'll be in my room if anyone needs me" Rori:'yeah ain't happening soon so ciao Mexico" I smiled and walked upstairs damn I'm going to ruin her and big time. . . RORI Oh great Lord these bitches are stupid i tell you they think I don't know anything well I just sat down with Unathi rubbing my tummy. Unathi:"you know friend I

read somewhere that a tummy massage helps a pregnant woman sleep" I laughed so hard
Me:"you and Lwazi should stop with these weird information please" Unathi:"we are trying to make this less scary okay and we are excited so sue us" She smiled at me Me:"love you friend" Unathi:"I love the baby more" Kuli:"so friend who was that girl" Me:"jeez go ask her yourself" Kuli:"but Rori I'm just asking" Me:"as I said go ask her you two will get along like a house on fire you both want what you can't have" She sunk down and kept quiet making Unathi chuckle like hell. Me:"are you hungry babe?" Unathi:"uh uh just need some water" Me:"you know the kitchen friend" Unathi:"wow can I get you a refill?" Me:"no get Kuli something im fine" I went back to my drawing. We chilled with the girls but Kuli disappeared to the bathroom or so she says but believe me I'll know very soon and she better be not planning anything my hormones don't want me to play

nice

[03/09, 19:06] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . Episode 45 . .

Morning came but i don't know when i went to sleep or how I got to my bedroom cause I spent the entire day writing lyrics and drawing but I woke up in Lwazi's arms which I don't know when he got home cause I stayed up till midnight and he still wasn't here but i woke up to his handsome smile. Me: " He chuckled and just poked my forehead Me:"babe do that voice again please" Him:"what voice?"

Me:"Kwesta's voice" He chuckled and covered his mouth with his hand looking up. He looked at me and shook his head Him:"my throat hurts" I frowned Me:"please baba" And I was sitting on his lap with my legs wrapped around his waist in the living room nogal but Chrissy wasn't up yet so it's freedom. Him:"I love you Rorisho" I blushed and hid my face on his chest he said that in Kwesta's voice like the normal voice not

that rap voice, I squealed in excitement.

Him:"stop doing that hau..." Me:"it's so cute"

Him:"why do you love these boys that smoke weed with their weed voice" Me:"cause i also used to smoke weed babe and they are cute

too" Him:"i see...but I love you for real in my own voice" Me:"i love you a whole lot more

babe" Him:"how about we go on a well deserved holiday like that honeymoon we never had"

Me:"we still have a situation on our hands so maybe after" Him:"but we'll find out that she's

not pregnant then she'll bounce" Me:"you are confidant I see but we'll go I promise" Him:"we'll go to Mauritius right? We'll use the family beach

house" Me:"jeez what don't you Mkhize people have? Soon you'll tell me about a space ship"

He laughed Him:"and I do hey you'll see it"

Me:"but you dont want to buy me a car"

Him:'cause i don't want to lose you to a car accident" Me:"but i know the basics"

Him:"basics not the entire thing" Me:"teach me

then" Him:"in due time right now just sit still please" Me:"am I hurting you?" Him:"no you busy wiggling around makes me horny" I chuckled and just pecked his lips Me:"listen to that my favorite song" It was Major Lazer's particular and instead of getting off I started dancing on his lap and he held on my waist with a smile on his face. Him:"I'm going to hurt you Rori" Me:"but it's my favorite song Lwazi" Him:"yeah and it'll be my favorite boner too" I smiled and just continued with what I'm doing when Chrissy walked down I'm telling you this girl thinks this is Mexico she's always wearing see through type of PJs and never ties her robe my babe is into thick chicks now not bones. Chrissy:"morning" Us:"morning" We simultaneously smiled and just looked at each other again. Him:"can i tell you something mama?" I nod Him:"i got a boner" I don't want to laugh but I did cause he was laughing too everything seemed to be funny to

us Me:"you are stupid do you know that" Him:"I got a boner cause of you and I'm stupid? I told you not to dance like that" Me:"sorry.... Umh Chrissy" Chrissy:"yeah?" Me:"so did you make that doctor's appointment?" Chrissy:"yeah today at midday" Me:"cool we'll drive with you" Chrissy:"I don't..." Lwazi:'end of discussion" Me:"as the husband said babe end of discussion" She gave me an evil eye and just sat down to change the channel and no one changes my music channel in the morning. Me:"Amigo please don't touch that remote right now" Chrissy:"but you..." We stared at her all quite so yeah she put the remote down i know Lwazi hates the music channel but he knows i love it so he'll stand by me . Midday It was time for us to go to the doctor and believe me Lwazi was anxious as they come he didn't even speak to me,he was busy making noise with his keys when he was waiting for me to wear my shoes. Me:"for the love of God Mkhize stop that has"

Him;'mama I don't want to have kids with someone else except you so the thought of her carrying my child just kicked in" Me:"I know but just trust me okay... I love you and I won't let anyone take you for a ride my love I promise" He smiled and just pulled me towards him Me:"stop that" Him:"i love you Rori and thank you I mean the way we met I put you through a lot of things before but right now you are my rock my everything so I'm grateful for everything mama" I kissed his forehead Me:"stop making me old by calling me mama" Him;"you'll always be my mama no matter what so are you ready?" Me:"I should be asking you that I mean you are shaking" Him:"I'm fine babe come let's go" He held my hand and pulled me out we found Chrissy busy whispering on the phone, Lwazi cleared his throat and she jumped in fear I know her stupid plan so yeah tonight I'll tell Lwazi everything. We walked out and just drove to the doctor or so they say, I'm not going

to be shipped off to Mexico like some idiot when I have a husband who has the power to protect me. We actually were the first to be attended by the so called Dr Lloyd and I couldn't stop staring at him. Me:"so is she pregnant or not?" Dr Lloyd:"well it shows here that she's three months pregnant going to her fourth month" Lwazi:"that's rubbish" Me:"Lwazi calm down please can you do that for me" He gripped on his hands making fists he was fuming all because he doesn't know what I know.

Chrissy:"so can we have a scan please I can't wait to see our child Andrew" Me:"Chrissy don't test me I'll give you a nice early abortion understand me? That's your child until it's born so never ever even use the name Andrew in your baby shit" Everyone kept quiet Me:"now can we get this done with" Dr Lloyd:"of course umh go and lay on the bed for me" She stood up and followed the doctor my Andrew just sat next to me boiling like a kettle on fire not the

stove like real fire well the image of the so-called baby appeared Chrissy:"Andrew see that your child" Lwazi:"piss off Chrissy,im not here to play happy families with you understand me" I kept quiet and just rubbed Lwazi's back since he's angry. Me:"babe everything will be fine I promise you ..trust me" We were now driving home but he was breathing so deeply i squeezed his thigh I'll end all of this. Him:"she's fucking pregnant and that's not what I want" Me:"yes my love umh don't stress" He looked at me Me:"trust your wife please just believe in me I mean we'll adopt this baby and I'll help you raise him or her" Like hell I would we got home and I literally had to drag Lwazi to our room and lock us in. Me:"take my laptop and you'll find a folder filled with things" Him:"what?" Me:"your girlfriend and her tricks so stay in here don't go anywhere" Him:"I'm not your child Rori" Me:"please papa just don't do anything drastic" Him:"fine so where are you going?" Me:"to find

your so called child..." I went to take a quick shower and just changed into a black lace thong and it's bra I went to wear my wrap around red dress and red bottom heels I did my make up and damn I did myself up real good i put on some perfume and took my phone and purse. Me:"I'll be back just now now babe"
Him:"and where are you going when you are dressed to kill like that?" Me:"to solve this mess ain't no bitch whose going to make my babe cry like shit.... I love you" I gave him a long meaningful kiss and I pulled away Him:"no sex just seduction" Me:"I know only your dick is allowed in between these legs babe" I pecked his lips and walked away from him. Me:"oh don't do anything just yet understand"
Him:"yeah whatever" I walked out this doctor doesn't know the power of manipulation I see I just walked passed Chrissy who had this smile on her face this bitch though just because I'm a teen doesn't mean I'm an idiot I walked out and

hailed a taxi these private taxis are out of the option right now so yeah when I got to that Dr Lloyd's practice the receptionist told me he was busy so I made myself comfortable reading a magazine on new mothers and babies like everything I'm going through right now I found myself smiling at the thought and even rubbing my tummy. I waited for that son of a bitch to finish up and when he walked out with his patient I stood up and dusted myself off, he looked at me from head to toe. Him:"please follow me" I shrug and just strut behind him we got to his office and he closed the door after me. Him:"how can I help you" Me:"well Dr Lloyd.... I think we can help each other don't you think" Him:"there is nothing you can do for me so if you are not here for a check I'd suggest you leave" He opened the door but I pushed it shut and locked it. Me:"that's not nice doctor,see i can make your life rather nice" I smoothly pulled him towards me like I was all

up in his face staring deep into his eyes. Me:"or deeply painful.." I pushed him against the wall and he flinched a bit. Me:"but you seem to like it rough...am I wrong Lloyd? Don't you like your girls rough and wild?". . . "TO BE CONTINUED •

[03/09, 19:07] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . Episode 45 #2 . .

Him:"what do you want?" I chuckled and just tapped his cheek,I turned and went to seat down. Me:"oh please Lloyd seat down I don't bite unless you bore me" He was actually looking at me from head to toe. Me:"believe it sweety you are seeing correctly there are women like me out there,smiley and sexy so seat down" Him:"umh can you close up there" Me:"you scared of my boobs? Believe me you should be scared of me as a whole so sit down

please" He sat down Me:"see Lloyd my loyalty lies with the ones I love the most" Him:"I don't even know the ones you love" Me:"well you do see I married a guy out of fear and I hated him and now he's been taken for a ride" Him;"why should you care? You hate him anyway"

Me:"well that's the thing doctor i love him,I worship the ground he walks on and I'd kill for him.... The wise do say there is a thin line between love and hate, so when you and your idiotic bitch think you can take my husband for a ride you are damn wrong cause I'll make it rain bombs on you left right and center" Him:"I don't know what you're talking about"

Me:"that's old dawg you know very well what I'm talking about so tell me everything you know about Chrissy before I crush your balls"

He laughed. Me:"let me tell you a story and i want you to use your imagination on this one... Your girlfriend and kid,your mom and your two siblings okay imagine them stuck in a room

with the red ants being stripped apart piece by piece with you watching as your daughter screams out for you over and over and over and over and over again" I traced my finger down his cheek scratching him with my nail Me:"see my husband is one mean son of a bitch but you don't wanna mess with his elder brother and white crazy brother in law" I pushed his chair back and just sat in front of him on the table. Me:"so Lloyd its either you protect Chrissy or you work with me and I might throw in a couple of grands" Him:"listen I don't know what you want from me" Me:"well cutie pie I want Christina's file and the real one with your tapped confession or I'll kill you" Him:"fine just leave my family alone" Me:"well do as I tell you and I will tell my family to leave you alone" Him:"you are crazy do you know that?" Me:"yeah nice for you to notice see now I don't need a psychological analysis just do it" Him:"I don't know...." I stepped his dick gently. Me:"I'll crush your balls

with this shoe if you think you are wise understand?" Him:"okay okay... I'll give you the file just remove your leg from me please"
Me:"now you are talking.... Get it" He looked at me and quickly stood up he went to his files and just took out one then brought it to me he then gave me a tapped confession so they thought after the fake pregnancy shit I was supposed to be shipped to Mexico and they'll put me on an auction so they think, I got on a taxi home tired as fuck but Chrissy messed with the wrong person I got in and found Chrissy with my chocolate ice cream i mean this is some mean chocolate ice cream but she's wasting it. Me:"where is Andrew?" Her:"how should I know? I thought you weren't coming back" Me:"think again love I'm here to stay as always" I ran upstairs and found my bedroom door locked so I had to knock.. Me:"Lwazi come open here now" He didn't answer the door so I had to call him and guess what he was sleeping.

Me:"come open the bedroom door you lazy ass"
He grumbled and hung up he came to open all
half naked and sweaty. Him:"did you wake me
up to stare at me?" Me:"no now move your so
sexy hot yummy ass" Him:"and is that
supposed to be a diss?" Me:"no it's compliment
babe where you running or sleeping?"
Him:"sleeping" Me:"why are you sweating like
this?" Him:"shut up and come here" I giggled as
he picked me up and pinned me against the
wall attacking my neck with kisses XOXOXO. . .
CHRISSEY I couldn't hear anything now this is
why I hate sound proofed houses or maybe
Andrew is angry at the fact that she was
wearing like a slut i wonder who was hitting it
today except for Andrew. After a few hours she
came down wearing his shirt She stared at
me with this smile on her face I couldn't make it
out. Me:"what's wrong with you?" Her:"oh
nothing I'm just wondering what's happening to
Carlos right now I heard hell is tough"

Me:"what...what...". Her:"what am I talking about? Well sweetie you and your brother thought you can take me and auction me off huh?" Me:"i dont know what you are talking about"
Her:"wow that's what your friend Lloyd said not so long ago" She walked into the kitchen leaving me to scramble to call my brother but nothing I heard a chuckle behind me and she was standing there with a bowl of fruits. Her:"I'm sure he's dead by now shame...". I wanted to just chop her head off but I can't touch her cause Andrew came out of the room and welcomed her back now I'm stranded here all alone cause my brother is somehow dead now they are coming for me fuck you Carlos I shouldn't have listened to you.

[03/09, 19:07] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . EPISODE 46 ..
RORI . Seeing Chrissy scared like that cracks me up. I walked upstairs to find my hubby on the phone i didnt disturb him i just got on the

bed waiting for him to finish up and then we'll discuss his girlfriend and what to do with her he got on the bed and laid his head on my lap even taking my hand and putting it on his head so that i can scratch him i know he likes being a baby but I do it until he hung up Him:"babe i need you to go down to Durban for a bit" Me:"for what?" Him:"just a shopping trip.... You can do anything you want there" Me:"oh so you can be alone with her?" Him:"stop being crazy I'm also leaving on the same day and don't argue with me just bounce" Me:"I will find a fuck boy that side" Him:"I see who said im sending you there alone?" Me:'so you are going with me?" Him:"no I'm going to the Eastern Cape" Me:"what are you going to do there?" Him:"don't worry about that I just need us to be away from Chrissy this week" Me;"oh what's that?" Him:"just pack I will take you to the jet tonight" Me:"im leaving tonight?" Him:"duh just for a week but i will come see you in two days or so"

Me:"but why I hate sleeping alone the bed gets so cold when you aint there" Him:"you will be fine so my beautiful wife get up and start packing" Me:"so what are you planning?"

Him:"nothing just a get away with my wife"

Me:"but you are going to the EC". Him:'and let all this good food and wine go to waste? I will be just a day there and I'm right behind you"

Me:"we'll go shopping together right? You'll buy me tons and tons of shoes" Him:"no i will not go shopping with you" Me:"then don't come" Him:"I got a cookie to chow and a woman to please"

Me:"mxm my cookie has a price you got to take me shopping" Him:"okay fine" Me:"I love you so so so so so so...." He began snoring so I just slapped him only to get a giggle

Him:"so the story is over my Queen?" Me:"i wanted to tell you that i love you"

Him:"I love you too now don't even try sulking my love" Me:"but you fell asleep" Him:"and you like acting like a baby when you are actually this big bad ass chick

whose got the swess and all" Me:'what's swess?" Him:"oh you will know soon enough just pack for us" Me:"yes sir but how about I go with you to the EC and....." Him:"no you Are not going." I didn't even argue but I just packed his clothes and then mine I mean I'm going to Durban for a week just because he said so after everything we took a shower and just went down to have some food but Chrissy was not in the living room. Me:"she ran away" Him:"thats good come seat down I will make us some food" Me:"Lwazi but..." Him:"but nothing just seat and I will feed my baby" Arguing with him is a waste of time so I sat down while he made me some food and then he even offered to cook. We didn't see Chrissy for the whole day and we left without seeing her but Lwazi wasn't moved not even a tiny bit so yeah we went to get on the jet since they'll drop me off first then Lwazi Him:"i will be back tomorrow i promise" Me:"but babe it's so quite and dull here" Him:"I

will be back I promise" We kissed goodbye and he went back to the jet he's leaving me. I walked around the apartment and the thing is big like crazy so I will be bored all night long. ..
.ΔΔΔJust a mini helloΔΔ

F

[03/09, 19:07] Mk: ♡ My handsome monster -Our holy matrimony . . Episode 47 . My phone rang while I was in the shower so I ignored it but it rang again so I just took a towel and wrapped it around my body. I ran into the bedroom and took the phone from the bed checked the caller and it was Lwazi calling so quickly answered. Me:"hello" Him:"what are you doing?" Me:"huh?" Him:"I said why didn't you answer any of my calls" Me:"am I answering one of your texts right now? Are you high?" Him:"bitch I'll screw you up understand me?" Me:"futsek Lwazi what do you want?" Him:"don't unpack you are going to Florida" Me:"Florida as in the USA?" Him:"no Zimbabwe so get ready

someone to pick you up" Me:"now?" Him:"of course now" Me:"but I'm naked" Him:"get dressed and..." [Door knock] Me:"someone is at the door" Him:"get dressed before going to answer" Me:"but they could go away so relax" I walked out of the room and down the stairs busy chatting with Lwazi I miss him even more and just hearing his voice does things to me. I peeked through the glass and saw an exact copy of Lwazi but he didn't have a phone with him so it's not him. Me:"babe what....what is your exact copy doing outside my door?" Him:"let him he's name is Zandre but he'll be me in Florida" Me:"what's going on? Why should I walk around with a copy of you?" Him:"trust me my love but don't fuck him and no kissing" Me:"then he's not my husband you fool" I opened the door and the Zandre walked in and fuck he's my husband in deed but a yellow vision and damn fine but a bit rude he doesn't greet. Me:"Lwazi talk later let me attend this

nice caramel in here" Him:"I said no touching"
Me:"then you should have been here yourself
and not him cause brother he fine" Him:"I love
you my wife" Me:"I love you too my husband
now bye and we miss you" Him:"I miss your
pussy a lot more" Me:"fuck boy" I hung up and
just focus on the guy in the room with my hand
on my waist. Me:"ahem" He looked up at me
and only did he put his phone away and stood
up to give me a handshake a firm one even.
Him:"umh I'm Zandr  can I please see Rorisho" I
chuckled Me:"and do i look like her nanny? And
they say i must go to Florid with you as my
husband but you don't know your wife" He
gasped Him:"umh I'm sorry,but I thought this
Rori chick was some chick nje not this hot
chillies in front of me" Me:"yeah I think I'm going
to dress up now so I will be back" I let go of him
and went upstairs to change into my jeans and
a white T-shirt with a black jacket and red
bottom heels,I fixed up my hair and did my

make up. I put on my Gucci perfume thank God I'm not showing now I pulled the bags and walked towards the lounge i got to the fake Lwazi busy on his phone and my real husband never ignores me I cleared my throat Me:"Rule one:I have Lwazi's fullest attention so no phone texting when you are with me" Him:"umh okay" Me;"stand up please and I will make you my husband not just his copy" He stood up walking towards me yes he looks like Lwazi but he dresses so formal like he's going to meet Mandela in heaven he tucks in everything so I just untucked the shirt and took off his jacket unbuttoning his shirt too. Me:"now you look like him but I hate your perfume it's too strong and please don't be so uptight" Him:"but I love this perfume" Me:"well OUR baby doesn't like it now work with me here,so it's either Gucci and Guess" Him:"yes mam" I smiled and just kissed him but he was uptight so I pulled away. Me:"dude you are my husband for the time

being so act like it" Him:"you just caught me off guard" Me:"same shit I do with my hubby so act like him please" I pulled him towards me and placed his hand on my waist. Me:"relax okay" He swallowed hard and nod I kissed him and believe me he's a good kisser fuck I got goose bumps but then I pulled away Me:"be like this forever okay then we'll enjoy Florida" Him:"im sure we will" He pulled my bag and we went to the jet but i wonder what the real Lwazi is doing that crazy. . Lwazi I was sipping on my whiskey while waiting for my brother and the other guys to come with Christina bitch messed with me but I miss my baby now and I can't do none about it I just have to live with it that she's in the US while I solve these scavengers after her cause ain't no one taking my wife from me. The door to the study opened and Karabo walked in. Him:"she's still making you smile like a retard?" Me:"she's my wife not my toy car" He chuckled Him:"I got your bitch here she's

waiting for you" Me:"can you stop calling the women i sleep with bitches? It's not nice"

Him:"well they are so where is the wife?"

Me:"she's on a shopping trip" Him:"where?"

Me:"Florida bro" Ain't no wife of mine going to Florida so I will know if my own brother is the one selling my wife or not then we'll talk. We walked into the basement and found Chrissy out cold but she wasn't beaten. Me:"can you wake her up please" Senzo poured cold water over her and she woke up screaming like a baby. Me:*hey love how are you princess"

Her:*Andrew? Please tell them to let me go i promise to leave you alone" Me:"yeah you were planning on harming my wife so i don't think so"

Her:"please I'm sorry Andrew" Me:"tell me how many are you first..." She kept quiet and I hate beating girls but I slapped her so hard i held her chin up making her look at me. Me:"how many of you are here? And who besides the Chinese did you make a deal with" She kept quiet again

just infuriating me more i picked her up and just threw her towards the wall she even had blood coming out of her nose. Me:"Cumani,Senzo take over" Karabo:"and then? Where are you going?" Me:"I need to talk to my wife and find out if she's safe" Karabo:"you know she can't take calls on a plane" Me:"luckily it's not a public plane right so guys call me when she's ready to talk" Senzo:"of course" I nod and just walked out of the basement to the study and I took my laptop too Skype my wife she'll give me courage that I know luckily she picked up but with a towel wrapped around her wet self. Her:"baby" Me:"baby what are you doing?" Her:"just got out of the shower and what's going on with you?" Me:"I just miss you babe I can't wait to join you" She giggled Her:"yummy but I'm sure you'll be tired" Me:"I'm never tired for you even if I have been running up a mountain" Her:"you can still pick me up" She wiggled her eyebrows and it's weird but cute too. Me:"yep but then again I can

fuck you in the air and you know that" Her:"ain't we naughty? So what's happening?" Me:"I'll tell you when I come on Friday" Her:"two days away? I thought you were following me" Me:"I still have stuff to do this side and babe" Her:"yes my love" Me:"I love you" Her:"we love you more" She rubbed her belly i couldn't help but smile I mean I'm going to be a father. Me:"give him a kiss from me" I thought she wouldn't do it but she kissed her hand and put it on her tummy. Her:"from daddy baby and we miss him tell him to hurry up please" Me:"I'll be there very soon I promise" Her:"you better cause we'd go crazy without you" Me:"I love you guys just don't forget that" Her:"we love you too don't forget that nor us" Me:"listen I have to go I'll call you later and i love you" Her:"I love you too" She blew me a kiss and just closed her laptop fuck i miss her we'd be naked right now but I'm still in SA jeez talk about shit

F

[03/09, 19:08] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . Episode 48 . .
Lwazi . I called Zandr  since I couldn't get
hold of Rori i put on my headsets since i was on
Skype i don't want anyone to hear my secrets
he answered and it seems like he was in his
room so they have arrived Him:"boss" Me:"So
have you arrived?" Him:"yes sir and the first jet
is still in Florida" Me:"so you left no trail to
Vegas?" Him:"yes we used the hired one so
she's safe" Me;'and where is she?" Him:"she's
sleeping boss we had a long day" Me:"you
better keep your hands to yourself understand
me?" Him:'it'll be hard boss I mean your
wife,damn she's just out there" Me:"she's my
wife Zandr  remember that and no kissing"
Him:"she kissed me before we left" I shook my
head leave it to Rori to test me. Me:'that was a
once off understand?" Him:"yes but she's too
hot to resist" Me:"Zandr  don't test me
understand? You just have to protect my wife

until I get there" Him:"she's safe don't worry I might be alone but she's safe" Me:"good enjoy Florida and don't forget your purpose there" He nod and just closed his laptop I took off the headsets and gave Karabo my attention.

Me:"big brother?" Him:"she's dead bro..I killed her" Me:"you what now?" Him:"i didn't mean to she was just infuriating me when she didn't cooperate" Me:"then you should have left her alone" I pushed him across the room now I don't know how many people are after my wife I got no clue at all. Me:"Rori is still in danger and you may not care but I do" Him:"I'm sorry okay I'm sorry" Me:"well not enough for all I know she might not even come back from Florida shit brain". I tackled him and just punched him I know he's not sorry I think I broke his nose in the process I don't give a shit. Me:"you better pray nothing happens to my child and wife understand me? Or you'll have me to deal with and you won't like me one bit" I got up and just

went back to my drinking now to release the stress. Him:"im sorry" Me:"get the fuck out of my study now" Him:"i..." Me:"Now Karabo get the fuck out" He just wiped the blood and walked out Me:"Fuck!!" I threw the glass at the door screw it I'll drink from the bottle how am i supposed to protect her now i don't know how many are there. . Karabo I watched as the guys tortured her. Chrissy:"okay I'll tell you everything please" I cleared my throat Me:"guys give me a second with her" Senzo;"but..." Me:"but get out Senzo" Senzo:"right now we don't take orders from you" Me:"don't fuck with me Senzo just go" Cumani:"let's go bro we'll come back" Me:"yes listen to your friend Senzo bounce and close the door behind you" Senzo didn't want to leave but he did cause Cumani pulled him out I just slapped Chrissy. Me:"you'll talk huh? What were you going to say?" Her;"the truth about how you sold your sister in-law for a hundred million" Me:"and you think he'll believe

you huh? Don't you dare mention my name"

Her:"you know it's true and we both know that you wanted her for yourself" Me:"shut up"

Her:"you were planning on erasing her memory weren't you? So that she can fall for you"

Me:"shut up now before you get on my last

nerve" Her:"you want her and you know I'm telling you the truth" I hate being provoked like this and I won't let her risk my life and my

relationship with my family i just took out my gun and shot her in the head. Me:"you'll tell your ancestors the truth bitch" I walked out I have to tell Lwazi myself and act like I'm serious. .

Rori I woke up and this beautiful room but Lwazi's evil child didn't let me enjoy it cause I had to run to the bathroom and throw up fuck it I washed my mouth and just walked back I wonder why am I here not in Florida cause they said Florida not Vegas Me:"Zandré? Ayo where you at?" I walked into the lounge just to find him munching away on some pizza. Me:"you are so

evil why didn't you wake me up?" Him:"huh?"

Me:"I'm also hungry so you have woke me up"

Him:"oh you looked so peaceful so I couldn't do it I'm sorry" I sat down and took a piece

Me:"why did we come to Vegas?" Him:"I don't know only your husband knows" [Door knock]

Him:"must be the room service" He stood up and walked there he first looked at who it was.

Him:"guess who" Me:"food" He opened the door

laughing and only did I realize why he was laughing cause my boo walked in jeez I'm not a runner but I just ran into his arms I jumped up

and he caught me. Me:"baby" I just held on

tightly to him and he did the same. Him:"my

love....I missed you" Me:"I missed you more

babe I missed you more" I didn't want to break

the hug just taking in his cologne and being in

his arms after two days of changing hotels like

we are fugitives he put me down. Him:"so what

have you been up to?" Me:"hide and seek and

why didn't you tell me you were coming?"

Him:"and ruin the surprise? Zandr  the jet is waiting okay" Zandr :"okay and bye madam" I chuckled and hugged him Me:"bye Zandr ....so babe" I pulled him towards the couches Lwazi:"slow down babe" Me:"we'll go shopping right, have dinner dates and just do things we said we'd do" He pecked my lips and just stood up leaving me to smile like a retard I can't

[03/09, 19:08] Mk: My handsome monster:Our holy matrimony . . Episode 51 . . Him:"it's beautiful right?" I nod Me:"can't we just stay here? Like move" He covered me with his jacket and kissed my cheek wrapping his hands around my waist giving my tummy a tiny rub. Him:"wherever you are is always beautiful" Me:"Lwazi" Him:"yes love" Me:"what are you not telling me?" Him:"nothing babe let's just enjoy this okay no scary talk" Me:"this dinner was actually the greatest babe thank you so much" Him:"i told you it's about you and only you" Me:"thank you Mkhize i love this" Him:"i know

you love romantic stuff" Me:"so does your baby"
Him:"talking of which let's get you guys inside
it's getting cold" Me:"we are fine" Him:"baby this
pregnancy is still fragile in case you forgot so
let's go" He scooped me up honeymoon style
and walked with us to the elevator. Me:"and the
plates?" Him:"babe I paid a lot for this to
happen and in dollars" I chuckled he placed me
down and just pinned me against the wall.
Me:"we are still in the lift" Him:"so? We are
married why should we care?" Me:*this ain't
your hotel you know " Him:"says who?"
Me:"What do you mean?" He chuckled and
kissed me I responded i pushed him off. Me:"it
still hurts Lwazi" Him:"im sorry" Me:"wow this
husband of mine I love" Him:"yeah let's get you
to bed" Me:"aint you coming?" Him:"I'll be there
in a few" He kissed my forehead Him:"i love
you" Me:"I love you too' I turned to go to our
room but got an ass spanking Me:"ouch" Him:"I
love that ass" Me:"it loves you too" I went to our

room and just took off the dress and wore my PJ short and it's mickey mouse shirt I wore my happy socks and got in bed im tired as hell so it was easy to fall asleep but i heard Lwazi get into bed his hands worming around my waist a kiss landing on my neck. I turned around and snuggled close to him,he even lifted my leg and placed it on top of him. Him:"I love you Rorisho and I'll protect you with all of me" I'm too sleepy to respond Lwazi please anyway I slept in his arms I'm mean his so manly arms. Next day I woke up to the smell of freshly squashed orange juice and the smell of fresh toast I got a peck on my lips and a kiss on my forehead. Him:"wake up" I woke up with a smile on my face. Me:"morning" Him:"morning babe....get up and have breakfast before we go" Me:"go where?" Him:"shopping in Paris" Me:"but we are in Vegas and Paris is in France" Him:"so? Let's eat babe" I woke up and got served i was having fun cause everything i liked was set up for me

to devour. Him:"you go take a bath I'll put these away" Me:"yes sir Paris is calling my name"

Him:"and Milan" Me:"Paris is fine babe believe that" Him:"you love shopping I know" Me:"I love you" He pulled me in for a quick kiss. He pulled away and left me to smile like a retard.

Me:"we're going to Paris,we're going to Paris"singing I was doing the shuffle like crazy.

"Go bath Rori before I change my mind" I

chuckled and began whispering the song while shuffling to the bathroom,i took a bath busy

whistling i got out and went to do my stuff,i

wore my white lace underwear and its bra,i wore a maroon dress with a slit in the front with

black heels. Lwazi got out of the shower.

Me:"can you zip me up please" Him:"turn phela"

I did and he zipped me up kissing my shoulder

in the mix. Him:"I'm done" Me:*thank you" I went

about preparing myself for our trip I made sure

to look superb and so did my hubby with his

formal/casual wear with a gold watch on point

babe he looked so yummy. I was putting on my small earrings staring at him. Him:"stop staring please as I said it's rude" Me:"I'm not staring Lwazi" Him:"keep telling yourself that, anyway you look beautiful actually breathtaking I don't think Paris is ready for you" Me:"what? Have you seen the girls there?" Him:"well im talking about a real woman who is my wife" I know i should be happy and I am just Lwazi is usually like this when he's hiding something from me and its usually big Him:"shall we go?" He held out his hand so I gave him my hand. We walked out and then got on the elevator and passed the reception he was given a car key it's weird I know. Me:"whose keys are those?" Him:"mine" That's all I got out of him so i walked behind him then we left outside waiting for us was Bugatti. Him:"do get in please" He opened the door for me Me:"thank you" He came to his side. Him:"relax okay" Me:"I'm relaxed okay so drive" He drove us to the airport and yes we used a

private Jet it's getting boring now but what can i say he's paying or he owns it who knows what's going on.

[03/09, 19:09] Mk: My handsome monster-Our holy matrimony . Episode 52 . . The moment we landed in Paris I just wanted to touch ground and get some fresh air before i throw up so I was out first i even left my bag inside the plane Lwazi will come with it. "Have some water"

Me:"they'll just prompt me to throw up so no"

Him:"but its cold water it helps" Me:"I don't want our baby to be born with pneumonia so no"

Him:"wena you have a problem with everything Rori haii maarn I'm trying to help here" Me:"I didn't argue with you stop shouting at me"

Him:"im not shouting" Me:"stop talking.... Give me the bag" He gave me my bag and i took out some pills and a bottle of water I'm not joking I'm not drinking anything cold,acidic and that has too much sugar from now on until I give birth after drinking the pills I took out some nuts.

Me:"can we go?" Him:"are you okay?". I nod
Him:"okay lets go we'll catch a taxi" Me:"want
some peanuts?" Him:"do you have the entire
store in there?" I chuckled Me:*no just snacks
remember I'm pregnant" Him:okay but I don't
want any peanuts i don't eat those things"
Me:*you are not allergic to peanuts i know"
Him:"yeah i just tend to produce more umh..
You know" I shook my head Me:"i don't know so
tell me" Him:"I produce more sperms and I
ejaculate a lot" I chuckled and blushed kissing
his cheek Me:*thats cute" He blushed and he
checked in by the flight attendants and we were
checked in we got on a taxi and then the
shopping began. Him:"ain't you tired?" Me:"im
actually hungry not tired" Him:"Rori I'm holding
7 shopping bags and you two so I'm tired my
feet hurt" Me:"your shoes are somewhere in
there" Him:"two pairs Rori just two pairs"
Me:"really? Just carry them please" Him:"follow
me I'm meeting someone" Me:"did you tell her

that you have a wife? Cause i still can beat a bitch even when I'm pregnant" Him:"that's good but she'd kill you she's a gangster's wife"

Me:"well im a gangster myself don't stress" We were side by side slaying and looking all kinds of cute together I don't need anyone to tell me cause I know Lwazi and i we are cute. We went to a coffee shop and bro I was tired and the heels were killing me. Him:"there they are let's go" Me:"they? How many girls are you cheating with?" Him:"I'm Bisexual so there's also a guy too" I laughed and he also joined in I can't believe he's the husband I was afraid of we walked to this table where this hot hot chillies guy. Lwazi:"hello Haines" He put my bags down and shoulder bumped Haines:"if it ain't the prodigal son dude wadup" Lwazi:"I got hitched dude what did you expect... By the way meet my lovely wife Rorisho aka Rori" Haines:"oh Mrs Mkhize I'm Shane Haines and this is my wife Miralda Haines" Me:"umh nice to meet you

guys" Miralda:"nice to meet you too and you look good actually you are glowing" Lwazi:"i score hey" Me:"dont even think about touching me" We sat down and ordered i wasn't bored cause Miralda kept me busy the entire time while the men where having a discussion.

Miralda:"so where did you two meet?*

Me:"nowhere he stalked me and forced me into marrying him" She chuckled Me:"I'm being serious"

Her:"so that gorgeous thing had to force you to marry you?" Me:"yeah he did

massive things but now we are happy and expecting our first little bundle of joy" Her:"so

you guys are happy?" Me:"describe happy but we are fine now" Her:"thats great and i can see

he loves you' I took a sip of my juice Her:"i mean he has been staring at you since they left here"

Me:"he's been he's usual stalker self don't worry" Her:"young love hey I was once like that

with Shane I didn't want to hear anything when it came to him" Me:"you guys are so cute

together hey" "Babe let's go" I lifted my head and saw my darling husband calling me
Me:"home?" Him:"yes my darling now come" He hugged Miralda goodbye and I hugged Shane.
Me:"bye guys" Them:"bye" Lwazi:"Haines don't forget what we spoke about please"
Shane:"don't worry I got your back on this one,and Rori take care please" Me:"of course"
They said their goodbyes i wonder what's going on but after Lwazi just took our bags and we left we took a taxi but not to the airport we went to a hotel right there in Paris so no home.
Him:"what should i order for you?" Me:"nothing I'm going to lay down" Him:"why are you crying?" Me:"i want to go home Lwazi I miss home I'm tired of this hotel life" Him:"and we'll go love I promise but I have to get rid of Karabo first' Me:"why Karabo?" Him:"that's not important the important thing is that I'll be here with you innocent of any wrong doing" Me:"what did Karabo do Lwazi? What does he have to do

with our current situation" Him:"nothing go sleep" I held his hands and stared in hid eyes not breaking eye contact. Me:"what's going on? Please tell me why the Haines?" Him:"to protect you and our baby" Me:"from Karabo? I thought we could handle him" Him:"no we can't.... I'll handle him" Me:"we are a team Lwazi" [Phone rings] Him:"i gotta take this so team go take a shower and wear that yummy thing you bought I'll be there soon" He pecked my lips and took his call this guy though anyway I did go take a shower but I didn't wear the lingerie I just wore the silky nightie I bought it's short I don't know why I wore it I jumped into bed and got busy on my phone laying on my back I'm scared of laying on my tummy I put on my earphones and listened to my hip hop music eyes closed just enjoying the stuff. Wet lips just left trails on my legs coming up I opened one eye and already his T-shirt was on the floor Me:"what are you doing?" Him:"what does it look like I'm doing"

He pushed my legs apart and got in between pushing the nighty up. Him:"why ain't you wearing what I told you to wear" Me:"you aint the boss of me don't piss me off" Him:"this is still something i like it" Me:"I don't care so please stop and let me rest" Him:"i ate those peanuts of yours" Me:"oh did I feed them to you? Don't bore me asemblief" Him:"I'll rape you" I covered my face busy laughing. Me:*you just had to say rape" He pushed the dress up and just came up with kisses I know I was shouting at him but I love making him angry before we make love it's more fun and I enjoy it more. Me:"fuck... Lwazi it hurts" He chuckled Him:*you will learn not to buy me peanuts " Me"I didn't buy those and you know it so please shut it I can't even pee " Him:"come back please and stop hiding behind the toilet" He's ruthless I know but it was so much fun he had me screaming in tongues catch me on my day off doing this with my hubby and you will see our

true colors. I went back into the bedroom and just got into bed and slept in his arms. Him:"I love you Rorisho Mkhize" Me:"I love you too Mr Mkhize" Him:" that's why we have decided that you will remain while I go back to SA" Me:" you and who? Im going back home understand me? I also have a family and a job back there not to mention school" Him:"which are unimportant when you are dead so don't fight this and I have made my decision it's final" Me:"don't touch me please " Him:"I will be in the lounge call me when you are done sulking " He got off the bed and left me there stunned and ready for war how dare he make such choices for me huh it's my life I should live it the way I wanna but no what Lwazi says goes

[03/09, 19:09] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . Episode 53 . Rori
I just don't understand the person I call my
husband cause now I just have to say yes to
everything like I don't have a mind of my own, I

put on my nighty and slippers I went into the lounge and he was busy on his laptop. Me:"what happened to those three weeks you promised me?" He looked up and back to his laptop again. Him:"I'm not leaving tomorrow you know "

Me:"you didn't answer me....I said what happened to the weeks you promised me?"

Him:"what's weeks when slowly he's catching up? I told you I'd rather have you angry than to lose you completely "

Me:"I'm not afraid of your crazy brother and I won't let you shut me out again.... I will fight and protect myself. Isn't that what you wanted when you called your brother to come and train me?"

Him:"Rori just... "

Me:"no I'm going home with you and we'll have dinner with your brother....I won't let him control my life and I won't live in fear all because of him" He punched the coffee table and banged the laptop shut

Him:"why don't you listen? "

Me:"I'm not going to live in fear Lwazi I refuse" I went towards the phone

Me:"would you like

anything to eat?" Him:"no I'm fine" Me:"okay I'll just order for you" Him:"I said I'm not hungry... "

Me:"yeah you'll be done sulking very soon I know but I'm still going back home" I ordered some room service then waited for it I don't care if Lwazi is angry but if I keep on running I'm giving Karabo power over me and I don't want that I hate being controlled or living in fear. I switched on the TV busy fiddling with my phone. "If anything happens to my child Rori I'll never forgive you" I sighed Me:"do you know how hard it is being away from you? I'm always worried and that's not good for the baby you are talking about " Him: "at least you'll be safe" Me:"I want to be with you,that's when I feel safe.... When you are near by not like this. I hate being isolated from the people I love" Him:"we talk don't we?" Me:"once a week? I ain't bout that and you know it" There was a door knock and I went to open,the delivery guy pushed in the trolley so I tipped him and he left I closed the

door and just went to much door on my food I'm
starving I

want everything possible that is home cooked
especially by my granny. . Karabo I am tired

of seeing this stupid guy's face but he ain't
talking. Me:"Zandre where is my little brother?"

Him:"we are just lookalikes not bffs...i did my
end of the deal so I don't know" Me:"don't make
me hurt you" He chuckled Him:"hurt me? You

know very well your brother will not allow you to
kill you" Me:"don't test me just tell me where he

is" Him:"Florida so if you'll excuse me I'd be on

my way now,thanks for the drink" He gulped
down the whiskey and stood up this guy knows

I can't do anything to him that's why he's so

cocky now since my little brother ain't picking

up my calls and I don't know where he is that

leaves me with only one option call my contacts.

I dialed Shane's number and he quickly picked

up. Me:"ay bro" Him:"Trigger what's going on?"

Me:"can't a brother greet his brother? " Him:"you

haven't called in ages so come on" Me:"fine
dude I need help finding my little brother "
Him:"you talking about Fickles?" Me:"yeah I
can't reach him and he's overseas" Him:"maybe
he switched off his phone he'll call you" Me:"it's
urgent" Him:"I can't help you hey the wife is
keeping me busy" Me:"come on you got
contacts" Him:"Trigger, Fickles ain't a kid no
more so let him be...bye" He hung up I hate
such idiots. Me:"fuck...shit" I kicked the chair
away and just walked out of the room I need to
drink and a good fuck I'll be fine. . Lwazi I
was watching as Rori went about her daily
routine like nothing is happening she's busy
humming a song as she eats why won't she let
me protect her though that's all I want to
protect her and our baby but she's stubborn. My
phone rang disturbing me I checked the caller
and it was an unknown number so I picked up I
mean only Zandr  knows this number. Me:"ay"
??:"ay twinnie....listen there is trouble" Me:"what

Zandré" Him:"your brother is on my case he even had the audacity to threaten me" Me:"you didn't tell him anything right?" Him:"nah you know your brother doesn't scare me but he's looking for you" Me:"let him search he'll find what he's looking for and thanks " Him:"hey I knew what being your stunt double entailed and I'm ready for it" Me:"well see you soon and it's about to go down" Him:"we're ready this side and you know I'm always ready... Listen greet our wife I gotta hang up before they trace our call" Me:"done" I hung up just perfect he's still searching for her and he won't give up
Me:"Rori we have to talk" Her:"shoot"
Me:"Karabo is still searching for you and he won't stop so please babe let me handle this alone" Her:"I want to go home Lwazi.... You know being married to you has been one bumpy ride and Im tired ever since I !married into the Mkhize it has been one drama after the other so let him kill me please " Me:"how can you talk

like that? I don't want to lose you okay I'm not ready" Her:"and he won't stop looking so why waste resources? Let's give him what he wants... Let him kill me" ! Me:"you mean fake your death?" She nod Me:"that's a great idea why didn't I think of that?" Her:"you are stupid and when it comes to me you think with your heart and not mind " Me:"Rori!! Im still your husband " Her:"whatever just come and eat" She's right if we make him believe that she's dead then he'll back off giving us enough time to come up with a counter attack now she's just not beautiful she's got the brains too Im never letting her go no matter what she's mine.

[03/09, 19:09] Mk: My handsome monster-
Our holy matrimony . . Episode 54 .
Season Finale . I'll walk on water but I ain't
no Jesus,I'll walk on water but only when it
freezes cause I'm only human just like you
making my mistakes so if you only knew I don't

you should believe me in me the way that you
do cause I'm terrified to let you down

Eminem ft Beyoncé -walk on water(remix) .

Rori I had just finished showering when I
heard sounds coming from the lounge so I
brushed them off and went about my business I
mean he was bound to come back he can't stay
angry for ever I'm going to SA whether he likes
it or not. Me:"you back quick? short run?", He
didn't respond Me:"Lwazi? are you still angry
about that South Africa business? " I wore my
PJs and just put on my gown I put on my
slippers and went into the lounge I wish I didn't
cause it wasn't Lwazi I found four men in
balaclavas I turned around and ran to
my room but I could hear them right behind me
I was about to shut the door but he pushed it
open making me to fall hard on my ass. I was
scared I mean this can't happen again not like
this. I stood up but where will I go with four men
right after me do the math so one wrapped

his hands around me which I ain't having I took the bed side lamp and bashed his head in, I fought the best way I know how but these idiots don't quit they just kept on coming now two grabbed me and one covered my nose with this cloth I know what they are trying to do so I didn't breath I just held in my breath but I couldn't for long I ended up inhaling the drug which quickly made me drowsy and soon I was gone. I love you Lwazi and I know you tried your best in protecting us and I don't blame you for this. . Narrated The four men took Rori and used the fire escape door to walk out with her they went to a waiting Jeep land Rover waiting behind the hotel, they drove off leaving no trail on the scene. . Lwazi Jogging at night helps me think a bit better since there are no disturbances just the night sky which is Rori's favourite especially with all these stars and stuff just that she hates jogging so she opted to stay behind. I ran back to the hotel and it was

blocked by cops at this time I walked in to find cops everywhere at the reception and the receptionist came running towards I mean no one knows about me owning hotels out of South Africa I never used my name so only the staff knows me. Her:"sir" Me:"yes?" Her:"the police are looking for you and it's regarding your wife" Me:"what about my wife?" Her:"sir she's.... " "are you Andrew Mckhizé?" I just nod even though we don't pronounce my surname like that. Cop:"I'm sorry to inform you this but your wife has been kidnapped " Me:"what? are you sure?" Cop:"yes sir we got a distress call from one of the guests saying they heard screams coming out of your room" Me:"that's rubbish my wife is fine I'm sure she's sleeping " He shook his head I just turned around and went outside maybe if I start over she'll be here when I get back I rubbed my face this can't be happening. I took a deep breath and went back inside Me:"Viola where were you? why didn't you

call me on my cell when all of this happened?"

Cop:"sir calm down please we'll handle this "

Me:"don't you tell me to calm down when my wife and child are missing... don't tell me that "

Cop:"we're doing everything we can and we will find them" Me:"how when I'm still looking at

your beard? will they !magically reappear? "

Cop:"I got the best team handling this"

Me:"seems like your team ain't the best..." I

walked away from him best team my foot they'll be telling me shit soon,I'll get my own team so

yeah I called home but I called Senzo he did

pick up Him:"Senzo Khoza hello" Me:"pack your bags you are coming to Paris" Him:"Lwazi?

what's going on?" Me:"they took my wife so

mobilise the guys that side and you come here"

Him:"I should come with the whole squad? "

Me:"no tell them to keep an eye on Karabo and track his movements but don't trust anyone...

you will come here alone and remember I trust you with my wife's life " Him:"I know and I'll be

there very soon " Me:"cool " I hung up and just called Shane then Eric I know this is a foreign country but no one takes from me and expects to get away with it. I spent the whole night trying to trace her but it wasn't going to be easy cause her phone was in the hotel I'm not going to give up. Next morning I didn't sleep and the cups of coffee on the table proved it I called everyone I knew from Russians,Chinese, Mafia,Gangs I mean everyone I have worked with and they all said the same they don't know where she is or even know her I know they might lie but they were serious. 'Andrew?" Mpho did he have to bring her here I thought this was a boys only type of vibe. I stood up and went to meet them in the lounge it was Mpho,Eric,Shane and Miralda now the only person !missing is my wife she'd make everyone feel out of place Me:"and then? why bring the wives?" Mpho:"shut up" She hugged me busy rubbing my back Me:"Mpho stop I have to find my wife "

Her:"we'll find her I promise don't strain yourself please " I wanted to cry but then again I couldn't just cry in front of people so I broke away from her hold. Me:"I'm fine I just have to find Rori and I will be fine. Eric what did you find out?" Eric:"it wasn't Karabo that I know for sure" Me:"what do you mean?" Eric:"he was shot and he's hurt pretty bad" Me:"how sure are you? why didn't I know?" Shane:"he was shot in the morning yesterday" I banged the table Me:"fuck" Mpho:"relax we'll find her" Me:"stop saying that..." I hate this now the one person I thought was responsible for this is actually not maybe he is there was a door knock so Miralda:"went to open and Senzo walked in with Petro now I trust these two they'll forever be faithful to me they owe me. Senzo:"sorry we're late" Eric:"at least you are here" Me:"why didn't you tell me that my brother was shot?" Petro:"he said we shouldn't and we couldn't reach you" Me:"screw this what happened?" Senzo:"some guys came to the

office and just started shooting and two hit him" Me:"they should have killed him" I left and went to the bedroom I took my sweatpants and put them on and my vest and jersey I wore my trainers I gotta find my wife before anything else. I went back to the guys and they were all busy setting up so I got busy on my own laptop, later on we went out searching even the girls went out on their own so I thought we'd find something but we didn't and that infuriated me cause even the cops didn't find anything and for four whole days it's like they disappeared with her I was going crazy and forever drunk I had a bottle of whiskey in hand when a knock came through but my sister went to answer and the cops came in. Mpho:"they are here for you "

Me:"did you bring my wife?" Mpho:"just hear them out" She took the whisky from me

Me:"what is it?' Cop:"umh sir we have found your wife " Me:"so? where is she?" Cop:"she's dead we found her at the bottom of the Glider

bridge and her body is badly decomposed"

Mpho tried touching me but I shoved her away

Me:"no..how do you know its her? how sure are you?" Cop:"she matches your wife's description"

Me:"listen here my wife is not dead understand me? she's not dead so I want you to go out there and continue searching for her"

Mpho:"Lwazi please" Me:"shut up.... you that person is not my wife understand? unless you have concrete proof then it's not her"

Cop:"that's why we are we'd like to do a DNA test just to be sure so please" Me:"just

listen I said that person is not my Rori" Mpho just came out with Rori's toothbrush and gave it to them they thanked her and walked out I just wanted to punch someone or something but I couldn't and I don't believe that she's dead she's not dead I know that for sure. . Narrated The police did the test results and they were stamped as important so it was put on the top pile they rushed them and on the third day they

were released. [police station] Lut
Saints:"detective call Mr Mckhize here the
results are in" Det Roberts:"I think we should
take the results to him I mean this happened in
our home so let's honor him" The Luitanent nod
and they went to the hotel with two cops they
went up to Lwazi's room and they knocked this
time Eric opened the door Saints:"afternoon"
Eric:"come in" They walked in and found drunk
Lwazi busy crying his eyes out. Saints:"sorry to
disturb but we just got the test results"
Mpho:"and? it's not her right?" Roberts:"sorry
but it's Mrs Mckhize" Lwazi:"that's not how you
pronounce my surname you fool... go get
your facts straight " Mpho:"Andrew!!" she
shouted He sat back down and drank his
Scotch mixed with tears Eric:" thank you umh
you can go" Lwazi:"and stop saying my wife is
dead" He stood up and walked into his room the
two police officers said their goodbyes and left
them. Lwazi didn't want to come out of his

room he cried day and night even when they released the body to his family he still didn't want to go back home. Rori was buried as a Mkhize so she was buried in the family cemetery.

The End